

Jane Austen's
Pride and Prejudice:
A Discussion Guide

David Bruce

DEDICATED TO MOM AND DAD

Copyright 2013 by Bruce D. Bruce

Educate Yourself

Read Like A Wolf Eats

Feel Free to Give This Book to Anyone Free of Charge

Be Excellent to Each Other

Books Then, Books Now, Books Forever

TABLE OF CONTENTS

| | |
|--|------------|
| Preface | 1 |
| Volume 1: Chapters 1-23 | 2 |
| Volume 2: Chapters 24-42 | 140 |
| Volume 3: Chapters 43-62 | 220 |
| Appendix A: Bibliography | 329 |
| Appendix B: Paper Topics | 330 |
| Appendix C: Paper Hints | 331 |
| Appendix D: Short Reaction Memos | 339 |
| Appendix E: About the Author | 348 |
| Appendix F: Some Books by David Bruce | 349 |

Preface

The purpose of this book is educational. I have read, studied and taught Jane Austen's *Pride and Prejudice* many times, and I wish to pass on what I have learned to other people who are interested in studying Jane Austen's *Pride and Prejudice*. In particular, I think that the readers of this introduction to Jane Austen's *Pride and Prejudice* will be bright high school seniors and college first-year students, as well as intelligent adults who simply wish to study *Pride and Prejudice* despite not being literature majors.

This book uses a question-and-answer format. It poses, then answers, relevant questions about Jane Austen, background information, and *Pride and Prejudice*. This book goes through *Pride and Prejudice* chapter by chapter.

Teachers may find this book useful as a discussion guide for the novel. Teachers can have students read chapters from the novel, then teachers can ask students selected questions from this discussion guide.

The edition that I am using and quoting from is the Penguin Classics edition. However, I have modernized the punctuation and some of the spelling.

VOLUME 1: Chapters 1-23

Chapter 1

***Pride and Prejudice* was published in 1813, which is the early 19th century. The 1900s were the 20th century, and we are living now in the 21st century. So when was the first century?**

0-99: the 1st century

100-199: the 2nd century

1700-1799: the 18th century

1800-1899: the 19th century

1900-1999: the 20th century

2000-2099: the 21st century

Class will play an important role in *Pride and Prejudice* because British society can be very classist. What kind of class system do we have in the United States. (If you wish to do research, read Paul Fussell's book titled *Class*.)

In both societies, there is a lower (working) class, a middle class, and an upper class.

In England, gentlemen are people who don't have to work or who can work in genteel occupations such as being a clergyman.

The word "gentleman" also has another meaning: a moral meaning. A true gentleman is kind and generous.

In his book *Class*, Paul Fussell lists nine classes in the United States:

top out-of-sights

upper class

upper-middles

middles

high proles

middle proles

low proles

destitute

bottom-out-of-sights

The top out-of-sight class is very wealthy. Their mansions are out of sight; they have very long driveways so that no one can see their mansions from the road. They tend to vacation in places that other people cannot afford to go either because of money or because of the difficulty of getting there.

Athens, Ohio, has many destitute people who live on SSI or Welfare. They walk the streets looking for change that other people have dropped and not bothered to pick up.

The bottom out-of-sights are in mental hospitals and prisons.

The first sentence of *Pride and Prejudice* is very famous. What does the sentence say? What does the sentence mean? Based on this sentence, what kind of a novel do you suppose *Pride and Prejudice* will be?

These are the first two sentences of *Pride and Prejudice* (5):

It is a truth universally acknowledged, that a single man in possession of a good fortune, must be in want of a wife.

However little known the feelings or views of such a man may be on his first entering a neighbourhood, this truth is so well fixed in the minds of the

surrounding families, that he is considered as the rightful property of some one or other of their daughters.

The first sentence is the famous beginning of a famous novel. The second sentence helps explain the first sentence.

These two sentences are satiric. Basically, what is being said is that any unmarried man with money must of course wish to be married, and any family with unmarried daughters will of course have designs on making the unmarried man the husband of one of their daughters.

These sentences help let us know that we will be reading a comedy about relationships between unmarried men and women (or at least one unmarried man and one unmarried woman).

Note the emphasis on money. Young women should marry for money.

Write a brief character analysis of Mrs. Bennet based on what you learn in this chapter.

On p. 7, we read:

Mr. Bennet was so odd a mixture of quick parts, sarcastic humor, reserve, and caprice, that the experience of three and twenty years had been insufficient to make his wife understand his character. *Her* mind was less difficult to develop. She was a woman of mean understanding, little information, and uncertain temper. When she was discontented she fancied herself nervous. The business of her life was to get her daughters married; its solace was visiting and news.

We learn quite a lot about Mr. and Mrs. Bennet in this chapter.

Mrs. Bennet wishes to get her daughters married.

As soon as Mrs. Bennet discovers that Mr. Bingley has rented Netherfield Park, she immediately begins to think about how she can get one of her daughters to become engaged to and marry Mr. Bingley. That is why she is so insistent that Mr. Bennet pay a call on Mr. Bingley.

The first two sentences of the novel apply to Mrs. Bennet.

Mrs. Bennet does not understand her husband, who has an odd sense of humor, even though she has been married to him for 23 years.

Mrs. Bennet is a mother and wife with five grown-up daughters. “Grown-up” here means past puberty, as Lydia — the youngest — is only 15.

Mrs. Bennet believes that she used to be pretty, although now she is older with five daughters.

The narrator tells us much about Mrs. Bennet. The narrator says (p. 7; bullets added):

- “She was a woman of mean understanding, little information, and uncertain temper.”

In other words, Mrs. Bennet is not very intelligent, is not very well informed (does not know many facts), and is flighty.

- “When she was discontented, she fancied herself nervous.”

When Mrs. Bennet is unhappy, she thinks that she is suffering from nerves, which is a kind of overall excuse for anything and everything.

- “The business of her life was to get her daughters married; its solace was visiting and news.”

As we already know, Mrs. Bennet busies herself with finding husbands for her daughters, and she greatly enjoys gossip — aka “news.”

Write a brief character analysis of Mr. Bennet based on what you learn in this chapter.

On p. 3, we read:

Mr. Bennet was so odd a mixture of quick parts, sarcastic humour, reserve, and caprice, that the experience of three and twenty years had been insufficient to make his wife understand his character.

We learn these things about Mr. Bennet:

1. Mr. Bennet has an odd sense of humor.

He greatly enjoys teasing his wife. We see that in her insistence that he visit Mr. Bingley so that his family can establish an acquaintance with an eligible bachelor and so that she can set about getting one of her daughters engaged to him.

2. Mr. Bennet teases his wife by asking if the reason that Mr. Bingley has settled in the neighborhood is to marry one of their daughters.

Of course, that is not the case, as Mr. Bingley has not met any of their daughters yet. Mr. Bennet is simply teasing his wife.

3. Mr. Bennet teases his wife by saying that he does not intend to visit Mr. Bingley.

We will see, of course, that he does visit Mr. Bingley very quickly — and without telling his wife and daughters.

4. Mr. Bennet teases his wife by saying that he will send his wife to Mr. Bingley with a note giving Mr. Bingley permission to marry whichever of his daughters he chooses.

5. Mr. Bennet is very willing to criticize his own children. On pp. 6-7, he says:

“They have none of them much to recommend them,” replied he; “they are all silly and ignorant like other girls; but Lizzy has something more of quickness than her sisters.”

Note that Mr. Bennet puts in a good word here for Lizzy — that is, Elizabeth.

What do we learn about Mr. and Mrs. Bennet’s daughters in this chapter?

On pp. 6-7, we read:

[Mr. Bennet:] “You are overscrupulous, surely. I dare say Mr. Bingley will be very glad to see you; and I will send a few lines by you to assure him of my hearty consent to his marrying whichever he chooses of the girls; though I must throw in a good word for my little Lizzy.”

[Mrs. Bennet:] “I desire you will do no such thing. Lizzy is not a bit better than the others and I am sure she is not half so handsome as Jane, nor half so good humoured as Lydia. But you are always giving *her* the preference.”

[Mr. Bennet:] “They have none of them much to recommend them,” replied he; “they are all silly and ignorant like other girls; but Lizzy has something more of quickness than her sisters.”

We know that the Bennets have five daughters, but we learn about only three of them — of course, we learn about the most important three:

Lizzy (Elizabeth)

Elizabeth is Mr. Bennet's favorite daughter. He says that she is quicker (quicker in her mind, although she can run faster than Jane) than the others.

Jane

Jane is beautiful.

Lydia

According to Mrs. Bennet, Lydia is good humored. However, coming from Mrs. Bennet, that may not be a good thing.

What do we learn about Mr. Bingley in this chapter?

On p. 5, we read:

[Mrs. Bennet:] “Why, my dear, you must know, Mrs. Long says that Netherfield is taken by a young man of large fortune from the north of England; that he came down on Monday in a chaise and four to see the place, and was so much delighted with it that he agreed with Mr. Morris immediately; that he is to take possession before Michaelmas, and some of his servants are to be in the house by the end of next week.”

On p. 6, we read:

[Mrs. Bennet:] “Oh! single, my dear, to be sure! A single man of large fortune; four or five thousand a year. What a fine thing for our girls!”

These paragraphs give us the following information about Mr. Bingley:

1. Mr. Bingley is single.
2. Mr. Bingley is rich. He has an annual income of 4,000 or 5,000 pounds. (The English have an interesting way of reckoning wealth. They reckon it by income rather than net worth. If you have a large income that you can spend and/or invest, you are wealthy. If you don't have a large income despite owning lots of property, then you are not so wealthy.)

Note: To make the £ sign, use OPTION-THREE. Ex: £4,000 or 5,000.

3. Mr. Bingley has rented Netherfield Park very quickly after seeing it.

This may be good or bad. He can make up his mind very quickly, but that may not be a good thing.

4. Mr. Bingley is from the north of England.

Of course, what is related to us is gossip, but we will find that the gossip is accurate.

Chapter 2

Write a brief character analysis of Mr. Bennet based on what you learn in this chapter.

Mr. Bennet is an odd character who delights in teasing his wife and children.

Previously, Mr. Bennet has told his wife that he would not visit Mr. Bingley; however, in Chapter 2, we find out that he was among the earliest to visit Mr. Bingley. In other words, Mr. Bennet had always intended to visit Mr. Bingley, but he teased his wife and children by saying that he would not.

Mr. Bennet gets tired of his wife easily. She is in raptures because he has visited Mr. Bingley, and her raptures (excessive happiness) wear him out. On p. 10, we read:

“Now, Kitty, you may cough as much as you choose,” said Mr. Bennet; and, as he spoke, he left the room, fatigued with the raptures of his wife.

What is the importance of visits in this culture?

English society of the time — *Pride and Prejudice* is set in the early 1800s (1811 and 1812) — is based on classes. There is definitely an upper class, a middle class, and a lower class. The same is true of American society today, although many people would like to deny it — for more information about American classes, read Paul Fussell’s book titled *Class*.

In this society, it is rude to talk to someone — in upperclass society — unless you have been properly introduced. (The lower classes can talk to each other freely with no introductions.)

Mr. Bingley is a wealthy man, and he is a member of the upper classes. Mr. Bennet is not an especially wealthy man, although he and his family are able to live on the income

from their inheritance. However, both Mr. Bingley and Mr. Bennet are gentlemen, and therefore Mr. Bennet is able to call on Mr. Bingley once Mr. Bingley moves to Netherfield, which is in Mr. Bennet's region of residence.

When Mr. Bennet visits Mr. Bingley, Mr. Bingley is then able to visit Mr. Bennet's family. After all, Mr. Bennet has properly introduced himself to Mr. Bingley — you can do that when someone new moved into your region of residence. When Mr. Bingley returns Mr. Bennet's visit, of course we know that he will eventually meet and be introduced to the members of Mr. Bennet's family. Then, Mr. Bennet's daughters will be able to talk to Mr. Bingley at balls without breaking the forms of etiquette.

What do we learn of Kitty and Lydia in this chapter?

We learn very little of Kitty and Lydia in this chapter. Indeed, Kitty is never well developed as a character, although Lydia will be an important character later. For the most part, although Kitty is older than Lydia, she follows Lydia around. Lydia is the leader of the pair.

Kitty

Kitty has a cough, which would be a common occurrence in this culture — and in ours. Medicine is not well developed then, and even now we let colds run their course. Kitty is coughing, which annoys Mrs. Bennet, and Kitty's coughing makes Kitty fretful.

Lydia

Lydia is rather forward, rather pushy. She is the youngest of Mr. Bennet's five daughters, but she is not shy — she is also the tallest of the Bennet daughters. She is 15, and she wants to dance with Mr. Bingley. She certainly is not afraid to dance with Mr. Bingley.

On p. 5, we read:

[Mrs. Bennet:] “Lydia, my love, though you *are* the youngest, I dare say Mr. Bingley will dance with you at the next ball.”

“Oh!” said Lydia stoutly, “I am not afraid; for though I *am* the youngest, I’m the tallest.”

Chapter 3

• **How reliable is gossip? (How many people actually come with Mr. Bingley as opposed to how many the gossips thought would come?)**

Gossip is not always reliable.

Mr. Darcy

We do find out that Mr. Darcy makes 10,000 pounds a year, which is a very high income indeed. Apparently, that figure is reliable.

Mr. Bingley

However, rumor swirls around the arrival of Mr. Bingley's party — at first, people think that he is bringing many people — and many ladies — with him.

On p. 12, we read:

Lady Lucas quieted her fears a little by starting the idea of his being gone to London only to get a large party for the ball; and a report soon followed that Mr. Bingley was to bring twelve ladies and seven gentlemen with him to the assembly. The girls grieved over such a large number of ladies; but were comforted the day before the ball by hearing, that instead of twelve, he had brought only six with him from London, his five sisters and a cousin. And when the party entered the assembly room, it consisted of only five altogether; Mr. Bingley, his two sisters, the husband of the oldest, and another young man.

The party (not counting Mr. Bingley) is supposed to be 21, then everybody discovers that it is 6, then 5. The number of ladies supposed to arrive goes down from 12 to 5 — and then to 2.

These are the people who arrive at Netherfield:

Mr. Bingley

Mr. Darcy

Mr. Hurst

Mrs. Hurst (one of Mr. Bingley's sisters)

Miss Bingley

Why does Mr. Bingley's supposed bringing of 12 ladies make the Bennet daughters grieve?

The extra ladies, of course, are competition for male attention.

Write a brief character analysis of Mr. Bingley based on what you learn in this chapter.

On p. 11, we read:

[...] they were at last obliged to accept the second-hand intelligence of their neighbour Lady Lucas. Her report was highly favourable. Sir William had been delighted with him. He was quite young, wonderfully handsome, extremely agreeable, and, to crown the whole, he meant to be at the next assembly with a large party. Nothing could be more delightful! To be fond of dancing was a certain step towards falling in love; and very lively hopes of Mr. Bingley's heart were entertained.

Here we learn many good things about Mr. Bingley:

1. He is quite young.
2. He is wonderfully handsome.
3. He is extremely agreeable.

Extremely agreeable means that he has a good personality. He is not shy, but enjoys meeting and talking with people.

This report seems accurate.

4. Mrs. Bennet considers Mr. Bingley a good chance for one of her daughters.

On p. 12, we read:

Mr. Bingley was good looking and gentlemanlike; he had a pleasant countenance, and easy, unaffected manners.

This report backs up what we read on p. 11:

1. Mr. Bingley is good looking and gentlemanlike.
2. Mr. Bingley has a pleasant countenance.
3. Mr. Bingley has easy, unaffected manners.

Also on p. 12, we read how Mr. Bingley behaves at the ball:

Mr. Bingley had soon made himself acquainted with all the principal people in the room; he was lively and unreserved, danced every dance, was angry that the ball closed so early, and talked of giving one himself at Netherfield. Such amiable qualities must speak for themselves.

From this description, we learn:

1. Mr. Bingley is an extrovert who loves society.
2. He is lively and unreserved.
3. He dances every dance.
4. He is popular.

Write a brief character analysis of Mr. Darcy based on what you learn in this chapter.

On p. 12, we read:

His brother-in-law, Mr. Hurst, merely looked the gentleman; but his friend Mr. Darcy soon drew the attention of the room by his fine, tall person, handsome features, noble mien; and the report which was in general circulation within five minutes after his entrance, of his having ten thousand a year. The gentlemen pronounced him to be a fine figure of a man, the ladies declared he was much handsomer than Mr. Bingley, and he was looked at with great admiration for about half the evening, till his manners gave a disgust which turned the tide of his popularity; for he was discovered to be proud, to be above his company, and above being pleased; and not all his large estate in Derbyshire could then save him from having a most forbidding, disagreeable countenance, and being unworthy to be compared with his friend.

From this passage, we learn:

1. Mr. Darcy is rich. He has an income of 10,000 pounds a year.
2. Mr. Darcy is young and good looking. (On p. 12, he is referred to as a “young man.”)
3. Mr. Darcy makes an excellent first impression. Everyone is impressed with him.
4. Mr. Darcy is proud and makes a bad second impression. As a matter of fact, Mr. Darcy is the “Pride” in the title *Pride and Prejudice*.

We also learn:

1. Mr. Darcy dances only twice: once with each of Mr. Bingley's sisters.
2. Mr. Darcy is unimpressed with Elizabeth's looks, calling her beauty "tolerable" (13) but not enough to tempt him to dance with her.
3. Mr. Darcy becomes thoroughly disliked by the end of the ball. We know that because of p. 13:

He was the proudest, most disagreeable man in the world, and everybody hoped that he would never come there again. Amongst the most violent against him was Mrs. Bennet, whose dislike of his general behaviour, was sharpened into particular resentment, by his having slighted one of her daughters.

4. Of course, Mr. Darcy slights Elizabeth. He does not dance with her, and he calls her beauty only "tolerable" (13).

Compare and contrast Mr. Bingley and Mr. Darcy.

Opinion of Elizabeth's Beauty

Mr. Bingley considers her "very pretty," but Mr. Darcy considers her only "tolerable."

Popularity

Mr. Bingley is well liked, while Mr. Darcy is not.

Number of Dances at the Ball

Mr. Darcy dances only twice, while Mr. Bingley dances every dance.

Money

Mr. Darcy has 10,000 pounds a year, while Mr. Bingley has 4,000 or 5,000 pounds a year.

Opinion of Jane's Beauty

Both agree that Jane Bennet is beautiful. Mr. Darcy calls her “the only handsome girl in the room” (13).

Chapter 3

• How successful is the ball for the Bennet daughters?

It is successful for most of the daughters — all but Elizabeth. Even Elizabeth doesn't come off too badly.

Elizabeth

On pp. 13-14, we read:

[Mr. Bingley:] “Oh! she is the most beautiful creature I ever beheld! But there is one of her sisters sitting down just behind you, who is very pretty, and I dare say, very agreeable. Do let me ask my partner to introduce you.”

[Mr. Darcy:] “Which do you mean?” and turning round, he looked for a moment at Elizabeth, till catching her eye, he withdrew his own and coldly said, “She is tolerable; but not handsome enough to tempt *me*; and I am in no humour at present to give consequence to young ladies who are slighted by other men. You had better return to your partner and enjoy her smiles, for you are wasting your time with me.”

In other words, Mr. Darcy doesn't find Elizabeth all that pretty, although Mr. Bingley finds her very pretty.

Of course, Elizabeth reacts by not liking Mr. Darcy all that much; still, she is able to tell that story later and to laugh at it. She doesn't mind all that much being the butt of this joke.

Jane

Jane does very well. Both Mr. Darcy and Mr. Bingley find her beautiful, and Mr. Bingley dances twice with her.

Mary

On p. 14, we read:

Mary had heard herself mentioned to Miss Bingley as the most accomplished girl in the neighbourhood [...]

Kitty and Lydia

On p. 14, we read:

[...] Catherine and Lydia had been fortunate enough to be never without partners, which was all that they had yet learnt to care for at a ball.

How successful is the ball for Mrs. Bennet and for Mr. Bennet?

Mrs. Bennet

Mrs. Bennet is thrilled. It seems as if she may have found a future husband for Jane. At least, Mr. Bingley danced twice with Jane.

Good things seem to have happened to the other daughters as well, except for Elizabeth.

Mr. Bennet

Mr. Bennet stays home from the ball, although he is curious enough about it to stay up (with a book) awaiting news of the ball. (Of course, he would not admit that that is the reason for his staying up; instead, he would say that he was reading a good book.)

Mr. Bennet actually would prefer that Mrs. Bennet not be satisfied with Mr. Bingley and the ball. Unfortunately for him, she is very happy with both.

On p. 14, we read:

[...] He had rather hoped that all his wife's views on the stranger would be disappointed; but he soon found that he had a very different story to hear.

“Oh! my dear Mr. Bennet,” as she entered the room, “we have had a most delightful evening, a most excellent ball. I wish you had been there.”

Chapter 4

Based on their conversation in this chapter, compare and contrast Jane Bennet and Elizabeth Bennet.

Liking for Each Other

Both sisters like each other. They are the two oldest Bennet daughters, and they spend the greatest amount of time together. They are each other's confidants. Elizabeth is able to tease Jane without Jane getting upset.

Personality

Jane is a very sweet woman. She sees little evil in other people and always gives other people the benefit of a doubt. Often, but not always, this judgment is correct.

Elizabeth, on the other hand, is more critical than Jane, and she is willing to make a negative judgment about other people. Often, but not always, this judgment is correct.

On p. 16, Elizabeth says:

“Oh! you are a great deal too apt, you know, to like people in general. You never see a fault in anybody. All the world are good and agreeable in your eyes. I never heard you speak ill of a human being in my life.”

Opinion of Mr. Bingley

Both have very good opinions of Mr. Bingley. It is clear that Jane likes him, and it is clear that Elizabeth likes him. However, Jane is unwilling to reveal that she likes him a lot. This is one of her characteristics. She is reserved. Although she may love someone, she does not display her liking very openly so that anyone can see it. This can be a liability in making romance and finding a husband.

On p. 16, we read:

[Jane:] “I was very much flattered by his asking me to dance a second time. I did not expect such a compliment.”

[Elizabeth:] “Did not you? *I* did for you. But that is one great difference between us. Compliments always take *you* by surprise, and *me* never. What could be more natural than his asking you again? He could not help seeing that you were about five times as pretty as every other woman in the room. No thanks to his gallantry for that. Well, he certainly is very agreeable, and I give you leave to like him. You have liked many a stupider person.”

Opinion of Mr. Bingley’s Two Sisters

Jane thinks highly of Mr. Bingley’s two sisters, although Elizabeth thinks that they are proud. This shows a difference in personality between the two sisters. Jane thinks as well as possible of everyone, while Elizabeth is critical if criticism seems to be justified. Elizabeth is the more realistic of the two sisters.

Write brief character analyses of Mr. Bingley’s two sisters (one — Mrs. Hurst — is married; the other — Miss Bingley — is not married) based on what you learn in this chapter.

Jane

Jane’s opinion of the two sisters is good. Elizabeth says that the manners of the two sisters are not as pleasing as their brother’s, and Jane agrees — but adds (17):

But they are very pleasing women when you converse with them. Miss Bingley is to live with her brother and keep his house; and I am much mistaken if we shall not find a very charming neighbour in her.

Elizabeth

On p. 17, we read:

Elizabeth listened in silence, but was not convinced
[...]

The Narrator

Following the passage quoted above, we have a passage that tells much about the two sisters (17):

1. The manners of the two sisters are not as good as Mr. Bingley's.

[...] their behaviour at the assembly had not been calculated to please in general; and with more quickness of observation and less pliancy of temper than her sister, and with a judgment, too, unassailed by any attention to herself, she [Elizabeth] was very little disposed to approve them. (17)

2. They can please when they wish, but often they do not wish to please because they are "proud and conceited" (17).

They were in fact very fine ladies, not deficient in good humour when they were pleased, nor in the power of being agreeable where they chose it; but proud and conceited.

3. They are good looking, well educated, and have money.

They were rather handsome, had been educated in one of the first private seminaries in town, had a fortune of twenty thousand pounds, [...] (17)

4. They spend too much and associate with the higher classes. They look down on other people, but not on themselves.

[...] were in the habit of spending more than they ought, and of associating with people of rank; and

were therefore in every respect entitled to think well of themselves, and meanly of others. (17)

5. Their family is respectable, but they forget that their money comes from business (trade) (17).

They were of a respectable family in the north of England; a circumstance more deeply impressed on their memories than that their brother's fortune and their own had been acquired by trade. (17)

In Jane Austen's society, it is of higher status to make your money as a rural landowner than as a businessman who engages in trade. Both Mr. Darcy and Mr. Bingley are rural landowners with good incomes. Elizabeth's relatives the Gardiners are in trade, and this is why such characters as the Bingley sisters and Lady Catherine, whom we will read about later, look down on them, although the Gardiners have good manners and are very intelligent people. The Bingleys originally made their money in trade, but they can now make their income by being rural landowners. Later, we will read about Sir Lucas. He was knighted, became proud, and did not engage in trade. Charlotte, his daughter, suffers as a result of his decision.

Opinion of Jane

At the end of the chapter, we learn that both sisters think that Jane is a sweet girl, although they agree with Mr. Darcy that she smiles too much.

Mr. Bingley has a fortune of 100,000 pounds, while his sisters have a fortune of 20,000 pounds. Why is there such a disparity in wealth?

Jane Austen's society is sexist. In this society, families would give the most wealth to the oldest son and much less to the younger sons and to the daughters.

Mr. Bingley and Mr. Darcy are only sons, so no younger sons are left out in the cold.

We will see later in this book that some younger sons are worried about money.

Jane Austen refers to the main characters as Elizabeth and Jane and Mr. Darcy and Mr. Bingley. Is she sexist?

Once again, Jane Austen’s society is sexist. Mr. Darcy and Mr. Bingley are seldom referred to by their first names. (I find it difficult or impossible to remember their first names a few months after I have re-read *Pride and Prejudice*.)

However, in this case, Jane Austen can’t really refer to each of the Bennet daughters as Miss Bennet because there are so many. Once in a while, she does refer to Miss Bennet, who is Jane. The honorary title “Miss” is given to the oldest unmarried daughter of a family.

Note: First and last names with “Miss” — as in Miss Elizabeth Bennet — are also used to refer to younger daughters.

Based on what we learn in this chapter, compare and contrast Mr. Bingley and Mr. Darcy.

Friendship

Both are very good friends. In this case, opposites attract.

On p. 18, we read about these opposites (numbers added):

1. “Between him and Darcy there was a very steady friendship, in spite of a great opposition of character.”
2. “ — Bingley was endeared to Darcy by the easiness, openness, ductility of his temper, though no disposition could offer a greater contrast to his own, and though with his own he never appeared

dissatisfied. On the strength of Darcy's regard Bingley had the firmest reliance, and of his judgment the highest opinion."

3. "In understanding, Darcy was the superior. Bingley was by no means deficient, but Darcy was clever."

4. Darcy "was at the same time haughty, reserved, and fastidious, and his manners, though well bred, were not inviting. In that respect his friend had greatly the advantage. Bingley was sure of being liked wherever he appeared; Darcy was continually giving offence."

Popularity

Mr. Bingley is always well liked; Mr. Darcy is often heartily disliked. On p. 18, we read:

Bingley was sure of being liked wherever he appeared; Darcy was continually giving offence.

Opinion of the Ladies at the Ball

Mr. Bingley, as you would expect, is highly impressed by the beauty and personalities of the ladies at the ball, while Mr. Darcy is not.

On p. 18, we read:

The manner in which they spoke of the Meryton assembly was sufficiently characteristic.

Mr. Bingley

On p. 18, we read:

Bingley had never met with pleasanter people or prettier girls in his life; everybody had been most kind and attentive to him, there had been no

formality, no stiffness; he had soon felt acquainted with all the room; and as to Miss Bennet, he could not conceive an angel more beautiful.

Mr. Darcy

On p. 18, we read:

Darcy, on the contrary, had seen a collection of people in whom there was little beauty and no fashion, for none of whom he had felt the smallest interest, and from none received either attention or pleasure. Miss Bennet he acknowledged to be pretty, but she smiled too much.

A Note on Mr. Bingley

On p. 18, we read,

Mrs. Hurst and her sister allowed it to be so; but still they admired her and liked her, and pronounced her to be a sweet girl, and one whom they should not object to know more of. Miss Bennet was therefore established as a sweet girl, and their brother felt authorised by such commendation to think of her as he chose.

Mr. Bingley waits until his sisters approve of Jane (although she smiles too much), and then he feels authorized “to think of her as he chose.” Mr. Bingley relies too much on the opinions of other people. This will lead to difficulties in his relationship with Jane.

Chapter 5

Write a brief character analysis of Sir William Lucas based on what you learn in this chapter.

On p. 19, we read:

Within a short walk of Longbourn lived a family with whom the Bennets were particularly intimate. Sir William Lucas had been formerly in trade in Meryton, where he had made a tolerable fortune and risen to the honour of knighthood by an address to the King during his mayoralty. The distinction had perhaps been felt too strongly. It had given him a disgust to his business and to his residence in a small market town; and quitting them both, he had removed with his family to a house about a mile from Meryton, denominated from that period Lucas Lodge, where he could think with pleasure of his own importance, and, unshackled by business, occupy himself solely in being civil to all the world. For though elated by his rank, it did not render him supercilious; on the contrary, he was all attention to everybody. By nature inoffensive, friendly and obliging, his presentation at St. James's had made him courteous.

Not everything we learn about Sir William is good, although some of it is good.

1. Of course. Sir William is a Knight.

Note that we call knights by their first name, not their last. The correct title is Sir William, not Sir Lucas.

2. Sir William is proud, and he is made prouder by his becoming a Knight.

Formerly, Sir William was in trade — that is, he was a businessman. In fact, he was enough of a businessman to make a small fortune. However, after being knighted, he gave up business and started to live the life of a gentleman — that is, a life of leisure. This means, of course, that he contributes little to society. As a businessman, he was helping the country. Now, he enjoys himself.

Part of Jane Austen’s satire is that now Sir William can “think with pleasure of his own importance” (19) although he is unimportant. He was more important when he was engaged in trade.

3. Sir William has good manners. Although he is proud, he is not nasty or overbearing. Jane Austen tells us that he is not supercilious.

Supercilious: “Feeling or showing haughty disdain.” — *The American Heritage Dictionary*.

Disdain: “To regard or treat with contempt.” — *The American Heritage Dictionary*.

On p. 19, we read (bullets added):

- he was all attention to every body.
- By nature inoffensive, friendly and obliging,
- his presentation at St. James’s had made him courteous.

4. Sir William wants to be a gentleman, and so he no longer works in trade (business).

Write a brief character analysis of Charlotte Lucas based on what you learn in this chapter.

On p. 19, we read:

Lady Lucas was a very good kind of woman, not too clever to be a valuable neighbour to Mrs. Bennet. — They had several children. The eldest of them, a sensible, intelligent young woman, about twenty-seven, was Elizabeth's intimate friend.

1. The narrator tells us that Charlotte is sensible and intelligent.
2. Charlotte is 27 and unmarried, which means that she is on the verge of being an old maid (an old unmarried virgin).
3. Charlotte is not pretty — we will learn this later.

On p. 14 (Chapter 3), we read (Mrs. Bennet is speaking after the ball that introduces Mr. Bingley to the neighborhood):

First of all, he asked Miss Lucas. I was so vexed to see him stand up with her; but, however, he did not admire her at all: indeed, nobody can, you know; and he seemed quite struck with Jane as she was going down the dance.

This is an early indication that Charlotte is not pretty.

4. Charlotte and Elizabeth are friends.

As friends, they discuss men and relationships and social activities.

In this chapter, women discuss men. What do they say about the men?

1. They talk about how the men regard them.

Charlotte points out that Mr. Darcy regards Elizabeth as “just *tolerable*” (20). Because Charlotte is a friend and because Elizabeth likes humor, Elizabeth can hear this without becoming angry. Charlotte is her friend, and Elizabeth herself first spread this report about. She heard what Mr. Darcy had said about her, then repeated it to her friends.

All agree that Mr. Bingley regards Jane as very pretty. After all, he said that himself. On p. 20, we read (Charlotte is speaking):

Perhaps you mean what I overheard between him and Mr. Robinson; did not I mention it to you? Mr. Robinson's asking him how he liked our Meryton assemblies, and whether he did not think there were a great many pretty women in the room, and *which* he thought the prettiest? and his answering immediately to the last question — "Oh! the eldest Miss Bennet beyond a doubt, there cannot be two opinions on that point."

2. They talk about whether they like the men.

Of course, Mr. Darcy is disliked. On pp. 20-21, we read:

"I do not mind his not talking to Mrs. Long," said Miss Lucas, "but I wish he had danced with Eliza."

"Another time, Lizzy," said her mother, "I would not dance with *him*, if I were you."

"I believe, Ma'am, I may safely promise you *never* to dance with him."

Mr. Darcy's sins are that he thinks Elizabeth is "just tolerable," he did not talk to Mrs. Long except when she asked him a direct question, and he did not dance with Elizabeth.

How does Jane speak about other people?

As always, Jane tries to find good things to say about other people.

When Mrs. Bennet says that Mrs. Long sat by Mr. Darcy for 30 minutes without his speaking to her, Jane says (20),

“Are you quite sure, Ma’am? — is not there a little mistake?” said Jane. — “I certainly saw Mr. Darcy speaking to her.”

“Aye — because she asked him at last how he liked Netherfield, and he could not help answering her — but she said he seemed very angry at being spoke to.”

“Miss Bingley told me,” said Jane, “that he never speaks much unless among his intimate acquaintance. With *them* he is remarkably agreeable.”

On p. 21, Charlotte also speaks positively about Mr. Darcy. She says about Mr. Darcy’s pride,

“His pride,” said Miss Lucas, “does not offend *me* so much as pride often does, because there is an excuse for it. One cannot wonder that so very fine a young man, with family, fortune, every thing in his favour, should think highly of himself. If I may so express it, he has a *right* to be proud.”

***Pride and Prejudice* has a narrator — someone who tells the story. What kind of narrator does it have?**

The narrator of *Pride and Prejudice* is omniscient. The narrator is able to let the reader know what is happening in more than one place and with more than one character:

OMNISCIENT POINT OF VIEW: “The point of view in a work of fiction in which the narrator is capable of knowing, seeing, and telling all. It is characterized by freedom in shifting from the exterior world to the inner selves of a number of characters, a freedom in movement in both place and time, and a freedom of the narrator to comment on the meaning of actions.” — William Harmon and Hugh Holman, *A Handbook to Literature*.

Other narrators may be told by one character, who uses the word “I.” For example, Huckleberry Finn tells his own story in Mark Twain’s *Adventures of Huckleberry Finn*. In that case, we have first-person narration, and the narrator is not omniscient.

Chapter 6

• Is Jane's disposition such that Mr. Bingley is likely to know that she is interested in him? What does Charlotte think that Jane should do when she is around someone whom she loves?

Charlotte is very practical. We see that in what she says about Jane's reserve.

Jane does not wear her emotions on her sleeve. Even when she is deeply in love, she does not show it. Charlotte points out that this has an advantage and a disadvantage. It can be an advantage if it keeps other people from knowing your feelings; that way, if your love interest does not love you back, other people don't know that your love has not been reciprocated. However, it can be a disadvantage if the person you love does not know you love him.

On pp. 22-23, we read:

“It may perhaps be pleasant,” replied Charlotte, “to be able to impose on the public in such a case; but it is sometimes a disadvantage to be so very guarded. If a woman conceals her affection with the same skill from the object of it, she may lose the opportunity of fixing him; and it will then be but poor consolation to believe the world equally in the dark. There is so much of gratitude or vanity in almost every attachment, that it is not safe to leave any to itself. We can all *begin* freely — a slight preference is natural enough; but there are very few of us who have heart enough to be really in love without encouragement. In nine cases out of ten, a woman had better show *more* affection than she feels. Bingley likes your sister undoubtedly; but he may never do more than like her, if she does not help him on.”

This chapter is very important because Charlotte Lucas tells us her views on marriage and on love. What are they? Based on these views, do you think that Charlotte Lucas is likely to have a happy marriage?

1. Charlotte's views on marriage are not romantic.
2. Charlotte says, "Happiness in marriage is entirely a matter of chance" (24).
3. Charlotte does not think it is a good idea to get to know the person you are going to marry because it will not advance your happiness.
4. Charlotte thinks that married couples grew apart after marriage.
5. Charlotte thinks that it is best not to know the defects of the person you marry and with whom you will live your life.
6. Charlotte is likely to stay married, as she expects so little from marriage, but she is unlikely to be happy with her choice of husbands.
7. Charlotte does believe in securing a husband. She has no problem with paying attention to a man in order to get him to marry her.

On p. 24, we read:

"Well," said Charlotte, "I wish Jane success with all my heart; and if she were married to him to-morrow, I should think she had as good a chance of happiness as if she were to be studying his character for a twelvemonth. Happiness in marriage is entirely a matter of chance. If the dispositions of the parties are ever so well known to each other, or ever so similar beforehand, it does not advance their felicity in the least. They always continue to grow sufficiently unlike afterwards to have their share of vexation; and

it is better to know as little as possible of the defects of the person with whom you are to pass your life.”

Write a brief character analysis of Mary based on what you have read in Chapters 5 and 6.

Chapter 5

1. Mary talks like a book. She is not a person whom many of us would like to know.

On p. 15 in Chapter 5, we read:

“Pride,” observed Mary, who piqued herself upon the solidity of her reflections, “is a very common failing I believe. By all that I have ever read, I am convinced that it is very common indeed, that human nature is particularly prone to it, and that there are very few of us who do not cherish a feeling of self-complacency on the score of some quality or other, real or imaginary. Vanity and pride are different things, though the words are often used synonymously. A person may be proud without being vain. Pride relates more to our opinion of ourselves, vanity to what we would have others think of us.”

“Piqued” means that she prided herself on something.

Chapter 6

1. Mary is plain.
2. Because Mary is plain, she tries hard for accomplishments.
3. Mary is eager to display her accomplishments.
4. Mary can be rude. She succeeds Elizabeth’s place at the musical instrument, although Elizabeth could have played longer.

5. Mary works hard to be accomplished at music, but her manner of performing is stuck-up.

6. Mary has “neither genius nor taste” (25).

On pp. 25-26, we read:

Her [Elizabeth’s] performance was pleasing, though by no means capital. After a song or two, and before she could reply to the entreaties of several that she would sing again, she was eagerly succeeded at the instrument by her sister Mary, who having, in consequence of being the only plain one in the family, worked hard for knowledge and accomplishments, was always impatient for display.

Mary had neither genius nor taste; and though vanity had given her application, it had given her likewise a pedantic air and conceited manner, which would have injured a higher degree of excellence than she had reached. Elizabeth, easy and unaffected, had been listened to with much more pleasure, though not playing half so well; and Mary, at the end of a long concerto, was glad to purchase praise and gratitude by Scotch and Irish airs, at the request of her younger sisters, who, with some of the Lucases and two or three officers, joined eagerly in dancing at one end of the room.

When Miss Bingley’s wit “flowed long” (28) at the end of the chapter, what kind of wit is it? What does Miss Bingley think about the Bennets?

1. Miss Bingley’s wit is biting. She makes fun of Elizabeth and her family. We know that because she makes fun of Mrs. Bennet.

2. Miss Bingley and her sister like Jane and Elizabeth — especially Jane — best of all, but think little of the rest of the

family. Elizabeth is a rival for Mr. Darcy's affections, but not a serious rival as yet.

On. 22, we read:

The ladies of Longbourn soon waited on those of Netherfield. The visit was returned in due form. Miss Bennet's pleasing manners grew on the good will of Mrs. Hurst and Miss Bingley; and though the mother was found to be intolerable and the younger sisters not worth speaking to, a wish of being better acquainted with *them* was expressed towards the two eldest. By Jane this attention was received with the greatest pleasure; but Elizabeth still saw superciliousness in their treatment of every body, hardly excepting even her sister, and could not like them; though their kindness to Jane, such as it was, had a value, as arising in all probability from the influence of their brother's admiration.

On p. 28, Miss Bingley teases Mr. Darcy about marrying Elizabeth:

“Nay, if you are so serious about it, I shall consider the matter as absolutely settled. You will have a charming mother-in-law, indeed, and of course she will be always at Pemberley with you.”

Does Elizabeth Bennet's and Mr. Darcy's relationship advance in this chapter?

1. Yes, Mr. Darcy is starting to like Elizabeth.
2. Although Mr. Darcy is aware of Elizabeth's defects in face and figure, her liveliness and intelligence are beginning to win him over.
3. When Elizabeth declines to dance with Mr. Darcy, he is not displeased. Apparently, this kind of modesty and not

trying to trap a man is pleasing to him. Elizabeth tells Mr. Darcy, “Indeed, Sir, I have not the least intention of dancing” (27). This is a polite way of declining to dance with a man. In this society, it would be rude to decline to dance with one man and then to dance with another, so the woman, if she declined to dance with one man, would say that she had no intention of dancing at all at that time. After some time had passed after she declined dancing with a man, she could then begin to dance, but it would be rude to decline dancing with one man and then immediately to begin dancing with another man.

4. However, Mr. Darcy is not yet in love with her. When Miss Bingley makes fun of Elizabeth and the Bennets at the end of the chapter, Mr. Darcy is not fazed.

On p. 24, we read:

Occupied in observing Mr. Bingley’s attentions to her sister, Elizabeth was far from suspecting that she was herself becoming an object of some interest in the eyes of his friend. Mr. Darcy had at first scarcely allowed her to be pretty; he had looked at her without admiration at the ball; and when they next met, he looked at her only to criticise. But no sooner had he made it clear to himself and his friends that she had hardly a good feature in her face, than he began to find it was rendered uncommonly intelligent by the beautiful expression of her dark eyes. To this discovery succeeded some others equally mortifying. Though he had detected with a critical eye more than one failure of perfect symmetry in her form, he was forced to acknowledge her figure to be light and pleasing; and in spite of his asserting that her manners were not those of the fashionable world, he was caught by their easy playfulness. Of this she was perfectly unaware — to her he was only the man who

made himself agreeable nowhere, and who had not thought her handsome enough to dance with.

On p. 27, Mr. Darcy says to Miss Bingley,

“Your conjecture is totally wrong, I assure you. My mind was more agreeably engaged. I have been meditating on the very great pleasure which a pair of fine eyes in the face of a pretty woman can bestow.”

Chapter 7

How much wealth do the Bennets have?

Mr. Bennet has an income of 2,000 pounds a year, while Mrs. Bennet has 4,000 pounds (principle, not income). This is enough money that Mr. Bennet does not have to work; however, the Bennets are not wealthy.

The place where the Bennets live has been entailed. Legally, the estate must pass on to a male heir, but Mr. Bennet has only five daughters, and he and his wife are not expecting any more children.

We will see later that Mr. Collins, a cousin, is expected to inherit the property when Mr. Bennet dies.

What are Mrs. Bennet's family relations?

Mrs. Bennet's father had been an attorney.

She has a brother in a respectable line of trade in London.

She has a sister in Meryton, whose husband is an attorney who had been a clerk with her father.

How do Mr. and Mrs. Bennet differ in how they regard their children? Whose view, if any, do you suppose is more accurate?

Mr. Bennet is a man of odd humor. He is also intelligent. Therefore, he does not hesitate to call his children — especially the two youngest daughters — silly.

Mr. Bennet's favorite daughter is Elizabeth. He says that she "has something more of quickness than her sisters" (7).

Mrs. Bennet's opinion differs from her husband's. Elizabeth is her least favorite daughter, and she sticks up for the two youngest daughters: Catherine and Lydia.

Mrs. Bennet does not mind that her two youngest daughters are very interested in the military officers. She herself was at their age — and she likes a man in uniform. Unfortunately, this is not a very good recommendation. Mrs. Bennet is a silly woman, and her two youngest daughters take after her.

I think that Mr. Bennet is more accurate in his view of his daughters.

On p. 30, we read:

After listening one morning to their effusions on this subject, Mr. Bennet coolly observed,

“From all that I can collect by your manner of talking, you must be two of the silliest girls in the country. I have suspected it some time, but I am now convinced.”

Catherine was disconcerted, and made no answer; but Lydia, with perfect indifference, continued to express her admiration of Captain Carter, and her hope of seeing him in the course of the day, as he was going the next morning to London.

“I am astonished, my dear,” said Mrs. Bennet, “that you should be so ready to think your own children silly. If I wished to think slightly of anybody’s children, it should not be of my own, however.”

“If my children are silly I must hope to be always sensible of it.”

“Yes — but as it happens, they are all of them very clever.”

Write brief character analyses of Catherine (aka Kitty) and Lydia based on what you have read so far.

1. They are young.

Lydia is 15 at this time. Kitty is a little older.

2. They like young men in uniform — and young men in general.
3. They enjoy gossip about men.
4. They are silly and empty-headed.
5. They frequently go to Meryton for news (gossip) and to shop for clothing.
6. Lydia is the more aggressive of the two girls.

What is your opinion of the note that Caroline Bingley sends to Jane in chapter 7?

In Chapter 7 Caroline Bingley sends Jane this note (31):

“My dear Friend,

IF you are not so compassionate as to dine to-day with Louisa and me, we shall be in danger of hating each other for the rest of our lives, for a whole day’s tête-à-tête between two women can never end without a quarrel. Come as soon as you can on the receipt of this. My brother and the gentlemen are to dine with the officers. Yours ever,

CAROLINE BINGLEY.”

1. We note that Caroline says that two women cannot dine together (tête-à-tête) without having a quarrel. Therefore, a third person must also be present.

Of course, this makes women look pretty bad. It is a stereotype.

2. We note that the women invite Jane when the men are to be away.

A negative way to interpret this is that Jane's company is not desired when the men are to be around. Jane's company is second best to the men's. It can also mean that the two women (Caroline Bingley and Mrs. Hurst) are bored with each other's company.

Mrs. Bennet is determined to see her daughters well married. What stratagem does she employ in this chapter to help advance Jane's chances of getting married to Mr. Bingley? What bad result does her stratagem have?

In this society, about the only way for a woman to improve her social standing is to marry well — that is, to marry someone rich and of a higher social class. That is why Mrs. Bennett wants her daughters to be well married.

When Jane is invited to spend the day with Miss Bingley and Mrs. Hurst at Netherfield, Mrs. Bennet wants her to ride a horse because the day looks rainy, and if it is rainy, Jane will have to stay at Netherfield overnight. This will give her a chance to meet and talk with Mr. Bingley.

The Bennets have a carriage and horses, but the horses are needed to work on the farm, so they aren't available to be used for the carriage.

The plan works out. The day does rain, and Jane stays at Netherfield.

Unfortunately, Jane becomes wet from the rain, and she gets a violent cold. The medicine of that time was not as well developed as it is today, so some members of the family worry about her, but fortunately it is just a violent (bad) cold.

Jane writes home that she has a sore throat and a headache. This is not anything that would worry us today because we have penicillin and antibiotics, but serious infectious diseases in Jane Austen's time were sometimes called

“putrid sore throat,” so Jane Austen’s original audience would be aware that Jane’s sore throat could be serious.

Pride and Prejudice was published in 1813. It is not until World War II (ended 1945) that penicillin begins to be widely used.

After reading Chapter 7, what do you think is Miss Bingley and Mrs. Hurst’s opinion of Elizabeth? What is their opinion of Jane?

Elizabeth

Both Miss Bingley and Mrs. Hurst hold Elizabeth in contempt for walking so far in such bad weather although she did so in order to see her ill sister.

Elizabeth walks three miles in bad weather through dirt to visit Jane. She arrives “with weary ankles, dirty stockings, and a face glowing with the warmth of exercise” (33). We also read (33):

That she should have walked three miles so early in the day, in such dirty weather, and by herself, was almost incredible to Mrs. Hurst and Miss Bingley; and Elizabeth was convinced that they held her in contempt for it.

Jane

1. As we have already seen in the note that Caroline Bingley sent to Jane, the Bingley ladies seem to desire Jane’s company only when the men are away. Thus, Jane’s company is regarded by them as being second best to the men’s company.

2. The two sisters are not all bad. We read (34):

When breakfast was over, they were joined by the sisters, and Elizabeth began to like them herself,

when she saw how much affection and solicitude they showed for Jane.

3. The two sisters are not all good. We read (34):

Elizabeth did not quit her room for a moment, nor were the other ladies often absent; the gentlemen being out, they had in fact nothing to do elsewhere.

Once again, we see that Jane's presence is OK to the ladies — but it is OK especially when the gentlemen are absent.

Chapter 8

After reading Chapter 8, what do you think is Miss Bingley and Mrs. Hurst's opinion of Elizabeth? What is their opinion of Jane? What is their opinion of the Bennet family?

Jane

1. The two sisters observe etiquette, but they aren't all that concerned about Jane's illness. On p. 34, we read:

At five o'clock the two ladies retired to dress, and at half past six Elizabeth was summoned to dinner. To the civil enquiries which then poured in, and amongst which she had the pleasure of distinguishing the much superior solicitude of Mr. Bingley's, she could not make a very favourable answer. Jane was by no means better. The sisters, on hearing this, repeated three or four times how much they were grieved, how shocking it was to have a bad cold, and how excessively they disliked being ill themselves, and then thought no more of the matter; and their indifference towards Jane, when not immediately before them, restored Elizabeth to the enjoyment of all her original dislike.

Elizabeth

The two sisters gossip about Elizabeth (35-36):

When dinner was over, she returned directly to Jane, and Miss Bingley began abusing her as soon as she was out of the room. Her manners were pronounced to be very bad indeed, a mixture of pride and impertinence; she had no conversation, no style, no taste, no beauty. Mrs. Hurst thought the same, and added,

“She has nothing, in short, to recommend her, but being an excellent walker. I shall never forget her appearance this morning. She really looked almost wild.”

“She did indeed, Louisa. I could hardly keep my countenance. Very nonsensical to come at all! Why must *she* be scampering about the country, because her sister had a cold? Her hair so untidy, so blowsy!”

“Yes, and her petticoat; I hope you saw her petticoat, six inches deep in mud, I am absolutely certain; and the gown which had been let down to hide it not doing its office.”

In Jane Austen’s day, the bottom of the petticoat was meant to be seen, and it was not regarded as underwear. Elizabeth would have lifted her gown, but she would let the petticoat underneath keep her decently covered. When she arrived at Mr. Bingley’s home, she let down her gown, hoping to cover the mud on her petticoat. This was not entirely successful.

The Bennet Family

1. The two sisters look down upon the Bennet family. Why?

The Bennets are poor in comparison with themselves.

The Bennets have relations in trade (business).

Some of the Bennets are silly.

On pp. 36-37, we read:

[Mrs. Hurst:] “I have an excessive regard for Jane Bennet, she is really a very sweet girl, and I wish with all my heart she were well settled. But with such a father and mother, and such low connections, I am afraid there is no chance of it.”

“I think I have heard you say, that their uncle is an attorney in Meryton.”

“Yes; and they have another, who lives somewhere near Cheapside.”

“That is capital,” added her sister, and they both laughed heartily.

“If they had uncles enough to fill *all* Cheapside,” cried Bingley, “it would not make them one jot less agreeable.”

“But it must very materially lessen their chance of marrying men of any consideration in the world,” replied Darcy.

After reading Chapter 8, what do you think is Mr. Bingley’s opinion of Jane?

1. Mr. Bingley is concerned about Jane’s illness (35):

Their brother, indeed, was the only one of the party whom she [Elizabeth] could regard with any complacency. His anxiety for Jane was evident, and his attentions to herself most pleasing, and they prevented her feeling herself so much an intruder as she believed she was considered by the others.

2. Mr. Bingley may be in love with Jane already. He does not reply when the others say that her chances of marrying well are poor because of her family (36-37):

[Mrs. Hurst:] “I have an excessive regard for Jane Bennet, she is really a very sweet girl, and I wish with all my heart she were well settled. But with such a father and mother, and such low connections, I am afraid there is no chance of it.”

“I think I have heard you say, that their uncle is an attorney in Meryton.”

“Yes; and they have another, who lives somewhere near Cheapside.”

“That is capital,” added her sister, and they both laughed heartily.

“If they had uncles enough to fill *all* Cheapside,” cried Bingley, “it would not make them one jot less agreeable.”

“But it must very materially lessen their chance of marrying men of any consideration in the world,” replied Darcy.

To this speech Bingley made no answer; but his sisters gave it their hearty assent, and indulged their mirth for some time at the expense of their dear friend’s vulgar relations.

Which people do you suppose Mr. Darcy considers to be “men of any consideration in the world” (37)? Do you agree with Mr. Darcy’s opinion? What does Mr. Darcy contribute to society?

Mr. Darcy really is a snob. He considers men of consideration to be rich and well-born men.

We don’t have to agree with this opinion.

Mr. Darcy seems to contribute little to society. He doesn’t work. He is not involved in politics. He makes money, but it is unearned income. Basically, Mr. Darcy contributes to society by employing servants and spending money. For example, we hear that Pemberley — his estate — is well kept, and we also hear that he spends a lot of money on books (37-38):

Elizabeth assured him that she could suit herself perfectly with those [books] in the room.

“I am astonished,” said Miss Bingley, “that my father should have left so small a collection of books. What a delightful library you have at Pemberley, Mr. Darcy!”

“It ought to be good,” he replied, “it has been the work of many generations.”

“And then you have added so much to it yourself, you are always buying books.”

“I cannot comprehend the neglect of a family library in such days as these.”

Mr. Darcy does manage his money well and probably has people farming his estate. (Mr. Bennet has people farming his estate.)

However, later, in Volume 3, we find out that Mr. Darcy is a considerate landowner and that his employees greatly respect him. He does not abuse other people.

Like other people in this society, Mr. Darcy looks down on people in trade (business). People in our society have a much different opinion. People in trade (business) create jobs. Of course, people who own businesses can abuse their employees, but many people in trade are good people.

Mr. Jones is a physician. How good do you think medicine is at this time? (Hint: If you wish to do some research, find out when aspirin and penicillin were discovered.)

Medicine was not advanced at the time.

This novel takes place in the early 1800s, and even during the Civil War (1861-1865), amputations took place without painkillers.

Medicine really took off in the 20th century.

Aspirin was created in 1899 by Felix Hoffmann, a German chemist who was employed by Bayer, and who wanted to relieve the pain that his father suffered from arthritis.

Alexander Fleming discovered the effectiveness of penicillin in stopping infection. Penicillin was first widely used during World War II.

Write a brief character analysis of Mr. Hurst based on what you have read so far.

Jane Austen is very good at writing about fools, and Mr. Hurst is a fool.

1. Mr. Hurst merely looks like a gentleman.

On p. 12 (ch. 3), we read:

Mr. Bingley was good looking and gentlemanlike; he had a pleasant countenance, and easy, unaffected manners. [...] His brother-in-law, Mr. Hurst, merely looked the gentleman; but his friend Mr. Darcy soon drew the attention of the room by his fine, tall person, handsome features, noble mien; and the report which was in general circulation within five minutes after his entrance, of his having ten thousand a year.

2. Mr. Hurst is indolent (“Disinclined to work; habitually lazy” — *The American Heritage Dictionary*).

3. Mr. Hurst eats, drinks, and plays cards — he does very little else.

4. Mr. Hurst has no conversation. He sits by Elizabeth, who does have conversation, and he can say little to her. He

merely asks about she prefers a plain dish to a ragout (“A spicy meat or fish stew” — *The American Heritage Dictionary*), then has nothing more to say to her.

On p. 33, we read:

She [Elizabeth] was shown into the breakfast-parlour, where all but Jane were assembled, and where her appearance created a great deal of surprise. That she should have walked three miles so early in the day, in such dirty weather, and by herself, was almost incredible to Mrs. Hurst and Miss Bingley; and Elizabeth was convinced that they held her in contempt for it. She was received, however, very politely by them; and in their brother’s manners there was something better than politeness; there was good humour and kindness. Mr. Darcy said very little, and Mr. Hurst nothing at all. The former was divided between admiration of the brilliancy which exercise had given to her complexion, and doubt as to the occasion’s justifying her coming so far alone. The latter was thinking only of his breakfast.

On p. 35 (ch. 8), we read:

Miss Bingley was engrossed by Mr. Darcy, her sister scarcely less so; and as for Mr. Hurst, by whom Elizabeth sat, he was an indolent man, who lived only to eat, drink, and play at cards, who, when he found her prefer a plain dish to a ragout, had nothing to say to her.

5. Mr. Hurst is amazed that Elizabeth prefers reading to playing cards.

On p. 37 (ch. 8), we read:

With a renewal of tenderness, however, they repaired to her room on leaving the dining-parlour, and sat

with her till summoned to coffee. She was still very poorly, and Elizabeth would not quit her at all till late in the evening, when she had the comfort of seeing her asleep, and when it appeared to her rather right than pleasant that she should go downstairs herself. On entering the drawing-room she found the whole party at loo, and was immediately invited to join them; but suspecting them to be playing high she declined it, and making her sister the excuse, said she would amuse herself for the short time she could stay below with a book. Mr. Hurst looked at her with astonishment.

“Do you prefer reading to cards?” said he; “that is rather singular.”

Does Elizabeth Bennet’s and Mr. Darcy’s relationship advance in chapters 7 and 8?

Chapter 7

On p. 33, we read:

She was shown into the breakfast-parlour, where all but Jane were assembled, and where her appearance created a great deal of surprise. That she should have walked three miles so early in the day, in such dirty weather, and by herself, was almost incredible to Mrs. Hurst and Miss Bingley; and Elizabeth was convinced that they held her in contempt for it. She was received, however, very politely by them; and in their brother’s manners there was something better than politeness; there was good humour and kindness. Mr. Darcy said very little, and Mr. Hurst nothing at all. The former was divided between admiration of the brilliancy which exercise had given to her complexion, and doubt as to the occasion’s

justifying her coming so far alone. The latter was thinking only of his breakfast.

From this passage, we see that Mr. Darcy thinks that Elizabeth is attractive. She has been exercising hard, her face is glowing (red and perspiring), and Mr. Darcy admires the effect on Elizabeth's complexion.

Chapter 8

Their relationship does seem to advance in this chapter, mainly as Mr. Darcy rejects Miss Bingley's criticisms of Elizabeth.

1. Mr. Darcy is aware of Elizabeth's flaws.

Miss Bingley regards Elizabeth as a rival for Mr. Darcy's affections, so she points out Elizabeth's flaws whenever possible.

On pp. 35-36, Mrs. Hurst and Miss Bingley say about Elizabeth:

[Mrs. Hurst:] "She has nothing, in short, to recommend her, but being an excellent walker. I shall never forget her appearance this morning. She really looked almost wild."

[Miss Bingley:] "She did indeed, Louisa. I could hardly keep my countenance. Very nonsensical to come at all! Why must *she* be scampering about the country, because her sister had a cold? Her hair so untidy, so blowsy!"

[Mrs. Hurst:] "Yes, and her petticoat; I hope you saw her petticoat, six inches deep in mud, I am absolutely certain; and the gown which had been let down to hide it not doing its office."

Mr. Darcy does say that he would not want his sister to be running around in the dirt like Elizabeth was.

2. Mr. Darcy still admires Elizabeth's eyes.

Following this, Miss Bingley says to Mr. Darcy (36):

“I am afraid, Mr. Darcy,” observed Miss Bingley in a half whisper, “that this adventure has rather affected your admiration of her fine eyes.”

However, Mr. Darcy's reply is not very pleasing to her (37):

“Not at all,” he replied; “they were brightened by the exercise.”

3. Mr. Darcy engages Elizabeth in conversation.

The conversation centers around the accomplishments of young ladies. Mr. Darcy speaks about what it takes for a young lady to be accomplished, and Elizabeth says that using such criteria, she does not know of any accomplished young ladies.

On pp. 39-40, we read:

“Eliza Bennet,” said Miss Bingley, when the door was closed on her, “is one of those young ladies who seek to recommend themselves to the other sex by undervaluing their own; and with many men, I dare say, it succeeds. But, in my opinion, it is a paltry device, a very mean art.”

“Undoubtedly,” replied Darcy, to whom this remark was chiefly addressed, “there is meanness in *all* the arts which ladies sometimes condescend to employ for captivation. Whatever bears affinity to cunning is despicable.”

Miss Bingley was not so entirely satisfied with this reply as to continue the subject.

This conversation is interesting. Basically, Mr. Darcy is saying that trapping a man (or captivating a man) resembles cunning, and what is cunning is despicable. Of course, Miss Bingley is trying to captivate Mr. Darcy herself, and so she tries to tear down Elizabeth in cunning ways.

Chapter 9

• What do we learn about Mr. Bingley in this chapter?

1. We learn that Mr. Bingley is willing to leave Netherfield very quickly (42).

Mrs. Bennet was profuse in her acknowledgments.

“I am sure,” she added, “if it was not for such good friends I do not know what would become of her, for she is very ill indeed, and suffers a vast deal, though with the greatest patience in the world — which is always the way with her, for she has, without exception, the sweetest temper I ever met with. I often tell my other girls they are nothing to *her*. You have a sweet room here, Mr. Bingley, and a charming prospect over that gravel walk. I do not know a place in the country that is equal to Netherfield. You will not think of quitting it in a hurry I hope, though you have but a short lease.”

“Whatever I do is done in a hurry,” replied he; “and therefore if I should resolve to quit Netherfield, I should probably be off in five minutes. At present, however, I consider myself as quite fixed here.”

“That is exactly what I should have supposed of you,” said Elizabeth.

This, of course, is important foreshadowing of a later plot development.

2. We learn that Mr. Bingley is very happy no matter where he is. On p. 43, Mr. Bingley says,

“When I am in the country,” he replied, “I never wish to leave it; and when I am in town it is pretty much the same. They have each their advantages, and I can be equally happy in either.”

3. We continue to learn that Mr. Bingley has good manners.

A. On p. 43, Mrs. Bennet exposes herself as a fool by pointing that the Bennets dine with 24 families, which is actually a good number except that she is comparing the number of families in her neighborhood with the numbers of families in London. We read about Mr. Bingley:

Nothing but concern for Elizabeth could enable Bingley to keep his countenance.

B. By using good manners, Mr. Bingley forces his sister to use good manners. On pp. 44-45, we read:

Mr. Bingley was unaffectedly civil in his answer, and forced his younger sister to be civil also, and say what the occasion required. She performed her part, indeed, without much graciousness, but Mrs. Bennet was satisfied, and soon afterwards ordered her carriage.

What is foreshadowing, and why is Mr. Bingley's declaration that "if I should resolve to quit Netherfield, I should probably be off in five minutes" (42) foreshadowing?

Here are a few definitions of foreshadowing:

Foreshadowing is the use of hints or clues to suggest what will happen later in literature.

Source:

http://www.tnellen.com/cybereng/lit_terms/foreshadowing.html

FORESHADOWING: Suggesting, hinting, indicating, or showing what will occur later in a narrative. Foreshadowing often provides hints about what will happen next. For instance, a movie director might show a clip in which two parents discuss their

son's leukemia. The camera briefly changes shots to do an extended close-up of a dying plant in the garden outside, or one of the parents might mention that another relative died on the same date. The perceptive audience sees the dying plant, or hears the reference to the date of death, and realizes this detail foreshadows the child's death later in the movie. Often this foreshadowing takes the form of a noteworthy coincidence or appears in a verbal echo of dialogue. Other examples of foreshadowing include the conversation and action of the three witches in Shakespeare's *Macbeth*, or the various prophecies that Oedipus hears during *Oedipus Rex*.

Source:

http://guweb2.gonzaga.edu/faculty/wheeler/lit_terms_F.html

Definition: A literary device used to hint at events that will follow later in the story, sometimes generating feelings of anxiety or suspense. Anton Chekhov once said that "if there is a gun hanging on the wall in the first act, it must fire in the last." That remark captures the essence of foreshadowing.

Source:

<http://contemporarylit.about.com/library/bldef-foreshadowing>

In fact, Mr. Bingley will later leave Netherfield very quickly.

In this chapter, Mrs. Bennet "exposes herself." What does she expose herself as, and how does she do that?

Mrs. Bennet exposes herself as a fool — no surprise there.

Anger at Mr. Darcy makes Mrs. Bennet expose herself. She thinks that he is criticizing the country and praising London and therefore she defends the countryside.

1. Mrs. Bennet says that there is a lot of *that* going on in the country. On pp. 42-43, we read:

“The country,” said Darcy, “can in general supply but few subjects for such a study. In a country neighbourhood you move in a very confined and unvarying society.”

“But people themselves alter so much, that there is something new to be observed in them for ever.”

“Yes, indeed,” cried Mrs. Bennet, offended by his manner of mentioning a country neighbourhood. “I assure you there is quite as much of *that* going on in the country as in town.”

That apparently is a reference to affairs and other such sexual matters. Unfortunately, *that* is not what Mr. Darcy and Elizabeth were talking about at all.

2. On p. 43, Mrs. Bennet exposes herself as a fool by pointing that the Bennets dine with 24 families, which is actually a good number except that she is comparing the number of families in her neighborhood with the numbers of families in London:

“Indeed, Mama, you are mistaken,” said Elizabeth, blushing for her mother. “You quite mistook Mr. Darcy. He only meant that there were not such a variety of people to be met with in the country as in town, which you must acknowledge to be true.”

“Certainly, my dear, nobody said there were; but as to not meeting with many people in this neighbourhood, I believe there are few neighbourhoods larger. I know we dine with four and twenty families.”

How do the other characters react to Mrs. Bennet's exposing herself?

Mr. Bingley

Mr. Bingley is a gentleman who does not criticize Mrs. Bennet.

Mr. Darcy

Mr. Darcy is willing to criticize Mrs. Bennet, but he will not join Miss Bingley and Mrs. Hurst in criticizing Elizabeth.

Miss Bingley and Mrs. Hurst

Miss Bingley and Mrs. Hurst freely criticize Elizabeth and Mrs. Bennet.

On p. 43, we read:

Nothing but concern for Elizabeth could enable Bingley to keep his countenance. His sister was less delicate, and directed her eye towards Mr. Darcy with a very expressive smile.

On p. 45, we read:

Mrs. Bennet and her daughters then departed, and Elizabeth returned instantly to Jane, leaving her own and her relations' behaviour to the remarks of the two ladies and Mr. Darcy; the latter of whom, however, could not be prevailed on to join in their censure of her, in spite of all Miss Bingley's witticisms on *fine eyes*.

Write a brief character analysis of Lydia based on what you have read so far.

1. Lydia is pretty forward.

She abuses etiquette by asking — or demanding — Mr. Bingley to hold a ball which he has promised to hold.

2. Lydia is stout.

Stout does not mean fat. It means healthy. It means robust. For her age, Lydia is physically mature.

3. Lydia is 15 years old.

4. Lydia is her mother's favorite daughter.

5. Lydia is high-spirited.

On p. 45, we read:

Lydia was a stout, well-grown girl of fifteen, with a fine complexion and good-humoured countenance; a favourite with her mother, whose affection had brought her into public at an early age. She had high animal spirits, and a sort of natural self-consequence, which the attentions of the officers, to whom her uncle's good dinners and her own easy manners recommended her, had increased into assurance. She was very equal, therefore, to address Mr. Bingley on the subject of the ball, and abruptly reminded him of his promise; adding, that it would be the most shameful thing in the world if he did not keep it. His answer to this sudden attack was delightful to their mother's ear.

"I am perfectly ready, I assure you, to keep my engagement, and when your sister is recovered, you shall if you please, name the very day of the ball. But you would not wish to be dancing while she is ill."

Lydia declared herself satisfied. "Oh! yes — it would be much better to wait till Jane was well, and by that time most likely Captain Carter would be at Meryton again. And when you have given *your* ball," she

added, "I shall insist on their giving one also. I shall tell Colonel Forster it will be quite a shame if he does not."

Chapter 10

• Based on what you read in this chapter, would Miss Bingley make a good wife for Mr. Darcy?

It is doubtful that Miss Bingley would make a good wife for Mr. Darcy. While he is engaged in writing a letter to his sister, she engages in some silly flirting with him, remarking on the “evenness” of his writing and constantly giving him messages to give to his sister. To Mr. Darcy, I imagine, this is annoying. To me, it would be definitely be annoying. However, it should make clear to Mr. Darcy that Miss Bingley is interested in him.

Mr. Darcy may also dislike the way Miss Bingley teases him about Elizabeth. He does like her eyes — and he does like her in general — but I doubt that he likes Miss Bingley’s remarks about a woman whom he considers handsome — which means good-looking when applied to a woman as well as a man. The language is a little old fashioned here.

On pp. 46-47, we read:

“You write uncommonly fast.”

“You are mistaken. I write rather slowly.”

“How many letters you must have occasion to write in the course of the year! Letters of business too! How odious I should think them!”

“It is fortunate, then, that they fall to my lot instead of to yours.”

“Pray tell your sister that I long to see her.”

“I have already told her so once, by your desire.”

“I am afraid you do not like your pen. Let me mend it for you. I mend pens remarkably well.”

“Thank you — but I always mend my own.”

“How can you contrive to write so even?”

He was silent.

“Tell your sister I am delighted to hear of her improvement on the harp, and pray let her know that I am quite in raptures with her beautiful little design for a table, and I think it infinitely superior to Miss Grantley’s.”

“Will you give me leave to defer your raptures till I write again? — At present I have not room to do them justice.”

Jane Austen’s society did not have ball-point pens. Instead, Mr. Darcy is apparently writing with a feather dipped in ink.

Letters were important in Jane Austen’s society because no telephones or computers existed.

Jane Austen’s society did not have envelopes. The envelope was formed by a piece of paper wrapped around the letter. The inside of the “envelope” could have writing on it. No postage stamps existed, and the recipient of the letter paid the postage. To save money on postage, letters would be what was called “crossed”: a sheet of paper would be written on, then turned 90 degrees, and then again written on.

Compare and contrast the conversation of Miss Bingley and Elizabeth so far in the novel.

Miss Bingley

Miss Bingley flirts, as we see in this chapter when she keeps commenting on Mr. Darcy’s handwriting.

Miss Bingley is very willing to criticize Elizabeth and the Bennet family.

Elizabeth

Elizabeth is frequently witty.

In Chapter 9, we read (44):

[Mrs. Bennet} “Oh! dear, yes; — but you must own she [Charlotte Lucas] is very plain. Lady Lucas herself has often said so, and envied me Jane’s beauty. I do not like to boast of my own child, but to be sure, Jane — one does not often see anybody better looking. It is what every body says. I do not trust my own partiality. When she was only fifteen, there was a gentleman at my brother Gardiner’s in town, so much in love with her, that my sister-in-law was sure he would make her an offer before we came away. But however he did not. Perhaps he thought her too young. However, he wrote some verses on her, and very pretty they were.”

“And so ended his affection,” said Elizabeth impatiently. “There has been many a one, I fancy, overcome in the same way. I wonder who first discovered the efficacy of poetry in driving away love!”

“I have been used to consider poetry as the *food* of love,” said Darcy.

“Of a fine, stout, healthy love it may. Every thing nourishes what is strong already. But if it be only a slight, thin sort of inclination, I am convinced that one good sonnet will starve it entirely away.”

Write a brief character analysis of Miss Bingley based on what you have read so far.

1. Miss Bingley is very interested in Mr. Darcy.

2. Miss Bingley regards Elizabeth as a rival for Mr. Darcy's affections.
3. Miss Bingley is a snob.
4. Miss Bingley would not make a good match for Mr. Darcy.
5. Miss Bingley has no problem at all insulting Elizabeth's family.
6. Miss Bingley is an unsympathetic character.

Compare and contrast what we learn about Mr. Darcy and Mr. Bingley in this chapter.

Writing Styles

Mr. Darcy writes slowly and with thought and care. People can understand what he writes in his letters.

Mr. Bingley writes so quickly — he says he does this because he thinks so quickly — that he leaves many words out of his sentences and blots (with ink) many of the words he writes. People cannot understand what he writes.

Reasons for Leaving a Residence

Mr. Bingley has already said that he would leave a residence quickly if he took the notion. Mr. Darcy feels that Mr. Bingley is very willing to follow another person's lead, so that if that person wished for him to stay at the residence longer, he would do so.

Mr. Darcy, on the other hand, would leave a residence only if he had a good reason. He would be less swayed by a friend's opinion than Mr. Bingley would be.

**How does Elizabeth almost affront (insult) Mr. Darcy?
Why doesn't she affront him?**

Mr. Darcy wishes to dance with Elizabeth, but she turns him down. This could be an insult to Mr. Darcy, but he lets it pass.

Elizabeth, in turning down Mr. Darcy, accuses him of wanting to despise her taste. This could be an insult to Mr. Darcy, but he lets it pass.

He lets these things pass because he is beginning to fall in love with her.

In addition, Elizabeth is so charming that it is difficult for anyone to feel insulted by her. We are told that her manner is a mixture of "sweetness and archness."

On p. 50, we read:

After playing some Italian songs, Miss Bingley varied the charm by a lively Scotch air; and soon afterwards Mr. Darcy, drawing near Elizabeth, said to her —

"Do not you feel a great inclination, Miss Bennet, to seize such an opportunity of dancing a reel?"

She smiled, but made no answer. He repeated the question, with some surprise at her silence.

"Oh!" said she, "I heard you before; but I could not immediately determine what to say in reply. You wanted me, I know, to say 'Yes,' that you might have the pleasure of despising my taste, but I always delight in overthrowing those kind of schemes, and cheating a person of their premeditated contempt. I have therefore made up my mind to tell you that I do not want to dance a reel at all — and now despise me if you dare."

“Indeed I do not dare.”

**What is Mr. Darcy’s opinion of Elizabeth at this time?
What “danger” could he be in if Elizabeth’s relatives
were of higher social class than they are?**

We read that Mr. “Darcy had never been so bewitched by any woman as he was by” Elizabeth.

Mr. Darcy would be in “danger” of falling in love with Elizabeth if her relatives were of higher social class than they are.

On p. 51, we read:

Elizabeth, having rather expected to affront him, was amazed at his gallantry; but there was a mixture of sweetness and archness in her manner which made it difficult for her to affront anybody; and Darcy had never been so bewitched by any woman as he was by her. He really believed, that were it not for the inferiority of her connections, he should be in some danger.

Chapter 11

• How does the reader know that Miss Bingley is interested in Mr. Darcy?

Miss Bingley hardly keeps her interest in Mr. Darcy a secret.

1. She pays attention to Mr. Darcy instead of to Jane when Mr. Darcy is present, although Miss Bingley and her sister (Mrs. Hurst) are capable of paying attention to Jane when the gentlemen are not around.

On p. 53, we read:

When the ladies removed after dinner, Elizabeth ran up to her sister, and, seeing her well guarded from cold, attended her into the drawing-room; where she was welcomed by her two friends with many professions of pleasure; and Elizabeth had never seen them so agreeable as they were during the hour which passed before the gentlemen appeared. Their powers of conversation were considerable. They could describe an entertainment with accuracy, relate an anecdote with humour, and laugh at their acquaintance with spirit.

But when the gentlemen entered, Jane was no longer the first object. Miss Bingley's eyes were instantly turned towards Darcy, and she had something to say to him before he had advanced many steps.

Note the conversation of Miss Bingley and Mrs. Hurst. They can (numbers added)

- 1) "describe an entertainment,"
- 2) "relate an anecdote with humor, and"
- 3) "laugh at their acquaintance."

The first two are fine, but the last is negative. Basically, they are able to make fun of people they know.

Note too that this is a classic triple (list three things, the last of which is funny) of joke writing.

Note: After dining, the custom was for the ladies to leave and let the men converse alone for a while. Then the men would leave the dining table and join the women.

2. Miss Bingley is up to her old tricks when Mr. Darcy tries to read a book. She is always asking him what he is reading and bothering him in general.

On p. 54, we read:

Miss Bingley's attention was quite as much engaged in watching Mr. Darcy's progress through *his* book, as in reading her own; and she was perpetually either making some inquiry, or looking at his page. She could not win him, however, to any conversation; he merely answered her question, and read on. At length, quite exhausted by the attempt to be amused with her own book, which she had only chosen because it was the second volume of his, she gave a great yawn and said, "How pleasant it is to spend an evening in this way! I declare after all there is no enjoyment like reading! How much sooner one tires of anything than of a book! When I have a house of my own, I shall be miserable if I have not an excellent library."

Note: Novels in Jane Austen's day were published in three volumes. Books were long back then, as people of leisure needed something to occupy their time. Jane Austen's novels were shorter than many novels of her time.

3. Miss Bingley decides to get Mr. Darcy's attention by walking up and down the room, which must be quite large.

On pp. 54-55, we read:

Miss Bingley made no answer; and soon afterwards got up and walked about the room. Her figure was elegant, and she walked well; but Darcy, at whom it was all aimed, was still inflexibly studious.

Does Miss Bingley enjoy reading?

No, although she says she does. We find that out by her actions.

On p. 54, we read:

Miss Bingley's attention was quite as much engaged in watching Mr. Darcy's progress through *his* book, as in reading her own; and she was perpetually either making some inquiry, or looking at his page. She could not win him, however, to any conversation; he merely answered her question, and read on. At length, quite exhausted by the attempt to be amused with her own book, which she had only chosen because it was the second volume of his, she gave a great yawn and said, "How pleasant it is to spend an evening in this way! I declare after all there is no enjoyment like reading! How much sooner one tires of anything than of a book! When I have a house of my own, I shall be miserable if I have not an excellent library."

No one made any reply. She then yawned again, threw aside her book, and cast her eyes round the room in quest of some amusement; when, hearing her brother mentioning a ball to Miss Bennet, she turned suddenly towards him and said,

Miss Bingley picks up a volume (a book) to read only because it is the second volume of Mr. Darcy's book.

In those days, novels were very long and were published in three volumes instead of the one volume that we have nowadays.

Apparently, the leisure class had lots of time to fill and not that many ways of filling it.

What is Mr. Darcy's opinion of himself?

1. I think that Mr. Darcy knows that he is proud, but that he does not regard that as a vice.

On p. 56, we read:

“Yes, vanity is a weakness indeed. But pride — where there is a real superiority of mind, pride will be always under good regulation.”

2. Mr. Darcy admits that he has faults.

3. One fault that he admits to is not forgetting “the follies and vices of others so soon as I ought, nor their offences against myself” (56). However, this need not be a fault. Mr. Darcy may be in the position of Mr. Bingley earlier (when describing his letter-writing). The supposed fault may hide a virtue.

On pp. 56-57, we read:

“No,” said Darcy, “I have made no such pretension. I have faults enough, but they are not, I hope, of understanding. My temper I dare not vouch for. It is I believe too little yielding — certainly too little for the convenience of the world. I cannot forget the follies and vices of others so soon as I ought, nor their offences against myself. My feelings are not puffed about with every attempt to move them. My temper would perhaps be called resentful. My good opinion once lost is lost for ever.”

Why does Mr. Darcy think it is dangerous to pay much attention to Elizabeth?

There are two interpretations, both of which may be correct:

1. Mr. Darcy is beginning to fall in love with Elizabeth. This is the interpretation I most favor.
2. Elizabeth is quick-minded, and Mr. Darcy may be afraid of losing an argument with her. She does not mind smiling (laughing) at his faults.

When Mr. Darcy points out his faults, Elizabeth says (57):

“*That* is a failing indeed!” cried Elizabeth. “Implacable resentment *is* a shade in a character. But you have chosen your fault well. I really cannot *laugh* at it; you are safe from me.”

On p. 57, we read:

“Do let us have a little music,” cried Miss Bingley, tired of a conversation in which she had no share. “Louisa, you will not mind my waking Mr. Hurst.”

Her sister made not the smallest objection, and the piano-forte was opened, and Darcy, after a few moments recollection, was not sorry for it. He began to feel the danger of paying Elizabeth too much attention.

Chapter 12

• How do Elizabeth and Jane end up leaving Netherfield? Whose idea is it? How do Mrs. Bennet and the residents of Netherfield react to their leaving?

Elizabeth and Jane both wish to leave Netherfield. Jane is sufficiently recovered to go home now, and neither she nor Elizabeth wish to outstay their welcome.

Mrs. Bennet

Mrs. Bennet wants them to stay longer. She is shocked and angry that they borrow a carriage and come home, giving as her excuse that Jane could easily catch cold again on the journey home.

Mr. Bingley

Mr. Bingley wishes greatly for Jane to stay longer. He enjoys her company and is worried that she may not be well enough to go home.

Jane

Jane shows some firmness here. She thinks that she is right to go home, and she insists on going home.

Jane and Elizabeth

Jane and Elizabeth, however, do agree to stay one day longer because the residents of Netherfield say that they want them to stay.

Miss Bingley

One person who made this request is Miss Bingley, who is sorry to have made it, as she is jealous of Elizabeth.

Mr. Darcy

Mr. Darcy is happy to see Elizabeth go, as he is becoming attracted to her, and he is determined to resist this attraction.

Mr. Bennet

Mr. Bennet is happy to see them come home. Now he can have some interesting dinner conversation.

Mr. Darcy is attracted to Elizabeth, and he doesn't like it. Why not? Why would he NOT want to be married to Elizabeth? How does he treat her when he knows that she is leaving Netherfield?

Mr. Darcy does not want to be attracted to Elizabeth mostly because of her relatives, although her lack of fortune may also play a role. Basically, Mr. Darcy thinks that Elizabeth is below him, that he would be lowering himself if he were to marry her.

When Mr. Darcy learns that Elizabeth is leaving Netherfield, he resolves to ignore her, so that she does not think that he is after her or is even interested in her. They are alone for 30 minutes, and during that time, he reads a book and ignores her. He also speaks very few words to her during her last day at Netherfield.

On p. 59, we read:

To Mr. Darcy it was welcome intelligence — Elizabeth had been at Netherfield long enough. She attracted him more than he liked — and Miss Bingley was uncivil to *her*, and more teasing than usual to himself. He wisely resolved to be particularly careful that no sign of admiration should *now* escape him, nothing that could elevate her with the hope of influencing his felicity; sensible that if such an idea had been suggested, his behaviour during the last day

must have material weight in confirming or crushing it. Steady to his purpose, he scarcely spoke ten words to her through the whole of Saturday, and though they were at one time left by themselves for half an hour, he adhered most conscientiously to his book, and would not even look at her.

Mr. Bennet welcomes the return of Jane and Elizabeth because he knows the family conversations will become more intelligent. What do you suppose the topics of conversation have been in the absence of Jane and Elizabeth? What would Mrs. Bennet, Mary, Kitty, and Lydia enjoy talking about? What would Mr. Bennet do or say, if anything?

We can easily guess the topics of conversation at the family dinner table while Elizabeth and Jane are away.

Mrs. Bennet

Chances are, Mrs. Bennet would talk about Jane's chances of marrying Mr. Bingley.

Mary

Mary would bring out her "thread-bare morality" (59). She would have been studying, and she would bring out examples of what she had learned.

Lydia and Catherine

Lydia and Catherine, of course, would be filled with gossip. They would be talking about the soldiers, and who was rumored to marry whom.

Mr. Bennet

Mr. Bennet is unlikely to say much. However, he would listen to and laugh at his wife and daughters.

On p. 59, we read:

They were not welcomed home very cordially by their mother. Mrs. Bennet wondered at their coming, and thought them very wrong to give so much trouble, and was sure Jane would have caught cold again. But their father, though very laconic in his expressions of pleasure, was really glad to see them; he had felt their importance in the family circle. The evening conversation, when they were all assembled, had lost much of its animation, and almost all its sense, by the absence of Jane and Elizabeth.

They found Mary, as usual, deep in the study of thorough bass and human nature; and had some new extracts to admire, and some new observations of thread-bare morality to listen to. Catherine and Lydia had information for them of a different sort. Much had been done and much had been said in the regiment since the preceding Wednesday; several of the officers had dined lately with their uncle, a private had been flogged, and it had actually been hinted that Colonel Forster was going to be married.

Chapter 13

What do we learn about Mr. Bennet in this chapter?

1) Mr. Bennet can be inconsiderate. He tells his wife and family about a dinner guest the same day the guest is arriving. In fact, the guest will be staying with them for a few days.

Most wives understandably would like more warning than this about a guest.

2) Mr. Bennet often does things that surprise and inconvenience members of his family.

On p. 60, we read:

“I hope, my dear,” said Mr. Bennet to his wife as they were at breakfast the next morning, “that you have ordered a good dinner to-day, because I have reason to expect an addition to our family party.”

3) Mr. Bennet took two weeks to answer Mr. Collins’ letter, thinking that it deserved “early attention” (60). Mr. Bennet is lazy.

What is an entail? What will happen to Longbourn after Mr. Bennet dies?

Here we have an example of sexism in this society.

The property was left to Mr. Bennet and to his male heir — that would be his first-born surviving son. Unfortunately, Mr. and Mrs. Bennet have had only daughters. Since they have no male heir, Longbourn will go to Mr. Collins, a male relative, after Mr. Bennet dies.

The purpose of the entail is to prevent the property from going to a female. At this time, the bulk of the property would go to the oldest son. We see sexism in the amount of money that the Darceys and Bingleys have.

Mr. Darcy has an income of £10,000 a year, meaning that he has approximately £200,000.

Mr. Bingley has £100,000.

Miss Darcy, Mr. Darcy's sister, has £30,000.

Bingley's two sisters have £20,000 apiece.

Of course, when Jane Austen writes about Mr. Collins and the entail, she is criticizing this way of distributing wealth. Mr. Collins may be a male relative, but the Bennets have never previously met him, and when they do meet him, he turns out to be a fool. It would be much better for the property to go to Jane and Elizabeth, who are both much more intelligent than Mr. Collins.

For one thing, Mr. Collins can support himself. When Mr. Bennet dies, his survivors will be badly off financially and will lose their home.

Based on Mr. Collins' letter, what kind of a character do you suppose he will be?

1. Mr. Collins will be a fool.

Mr. Bennet will enjoy his company (at times) because he gets a kick out of fools.

2. Mr. Collins is servile.

Mr. Collins sucks up to Lady Catherine de Bourgh.

3. Mr. Collins is self-important.

He seems proud of his ordination and of being known by Lady Catherine.

4. Mr. Collins' writing style is pompous.

5. Mr. Collins wanted to make peace between himself and the Bennets, but held back for fear that he might be disrespecting his father, who had quarreled with Mr. Bennet.

On p. 61, we read:

[...] I have been so fortunate as to be distinguished by the patronage of the Right Honourable Lady Catherine de Bourgh, widow of Sir Lewis de Bourgh, whose bounty and beneficence has preferred me to the valuable rectory of this parish, where it shall be my earnest endeavour to demean myself with grateful respect towards her Ladyship, and be ever ready to perform those rites and ceremonies which are instituted by the Church of England.

“Demean” seems to be the right word to apply to Mr. Collins.

Demean: “To debase in dignity or social standing.” — *The American Heritage Dictionary*

Debase: “To lower in character, quality, or value; degrade.” — *The American Heritage Dictionary*

Notice that Mr. Collins mentions Lady Catherine and showing her respect *before* he mentions doing his duties as a clergyman. A real clergyman would put God first and Lady Catherine second — or much lower.

6. Mr. Collins sucks up to Lady Catherine because she can get him more livings, therefore increasing his wealth. Mr. Collins, we will see, is very materialistic.

Note: A living is a clerical position with an income. Gaining an additional living means additional income.

What are the various reactions of members of the Bennet family to Mr. Collins' letter? What kind of a person do they suppose Mr. Collins will turn out to be?

Mrs. Bennet

Mrs. Bennet does not respond to the letter, but she dislikes Mr. Collins because the Bennet estate is entailed on him.

On pp. 60-61, we read:

“Oh! my dear,” cried his wife, “I cannot bear to hear that mentioned. Pray do not talk of that odious man. I do think it is the hardest thing in the world that your estate should be entailed away from your own children; and I am sure if I had been you, I should have tried long ago to do something or other about it.”

Jane

Jane always thinks the best about people. She wishes to praise him for wanting to resolve the differences between the families, although she wonders how he intends to accomplish that.

On p. 62, we read:

“Though it is difficult,” said Jane, “to guess in what way he can mean to make us the atonement he thinks our due, the wish is certainly to his credit.”

Elizabeth

Elizabeth recognizes these things:

1. Mr. Collins defers to Lady Catherine.
2. Mr. Collins' writing style is pompous.

3. Mr. Collins apologizes for being next in the entail, although she thinks that he would not change it even if he could.

On pp. 62-63, we read:

Elizabeth was chiefly struck with his extraordinary deference for Lady Catherine, and his kind intention of christening, marrying, and burying his parishioners whenever it were required.

“He must be an oddity, I think,” said she. “I cannot make him out. — There is something very pompous in his stile. — And what can he mean by apologizing for being next in the entail? — We cannot suppose he would help it, if he could. — Can he be a sensible man, sir?”

Mr. Bennet

Mr. Bennet thinks that Mr. Collins will be a fool and not a sensible man.

On p. 63, we read:

“No, my dear; I think not. I have great hopes of finding him quite the reverse. There is a mixture of servility and self-importance in his letter, which promises well. I am impatient to see him.”

Mary

Mary recognizes the use of a cliché, but she thinks that the content of his letter is good. Of course, Mary is herself pompous, so she likes the pomposity of Mr. Collins’ letter.

On p. 63, we read:

“In point of composition,” said Mary, “his letter does not seem defective. The idea of the olive branch

perhaps is not wholly new, yet I think it is well expressed.”

The offering of the olive branch is a cliché.

Lydia and Catherine

Catherine and Lydia have no interest in Mr. Collins because he is not a soldier.

On p. 63, we read:

To Catherine and Lydia, neither the letter nor its writer were in any degree interesting. It was next to impossible that their cousin should come in a scarlet coat, and it was now some weeks since they had received pleasure from the society of a man in any other colour. As for their mother, Mr. Collins’s letter had done away much of her ill-will, and she was preparing to see him with a degree of composure, which astonished her husband and daughters.

Write a short character analysis of Mr. Collins based on what you learn from Chapter 13.

1. Mr. Collins is punctual.
2. Mr. Collins is a tall, heavy-looking young man of 25 years of age.
3. Mr. Collins is full of compliments toward the Miss Bennets. He praises their beauty and says that they will be married well.

The Miss Bennets are not especially desirous of hearing these compliments. When one sees Mr. Collins, one does not want to think of marriage.

4. Mr. Collins is full of compliments toward the Bennet house.

Mrs. Bennet, however, thinks that Mr. Collins is thinking of everything becoming his after Mr. Bennet dies, so therefore she is not especially pleased to be hearing these compliments.

5. Mr. Collins is capable of apologizing for much longer than is needed.

He thinks that one of the Bennet daughters has been cooking, but Mrs. Bennet lets him know that the Bennet family can afford to keep a cook. Mr. Collins apologizes, Mrs. Bennet accepts the apology, and Mr. Collins keeps on apologizing for another 15 minutes.

On p. 63, we read:

Mr. Collins was punctual to his time, and was received with great politeness by the whole family. Mr. Bennet indeed said little; but the ladies were ready enough to talk, and Mr. Collins seemed neither in need of encouragement, nor inclined to be silent himself. He was a tall, heavy looking young man of five and twenty. His air was grave and stately, and his manners were very formal. He had not been long seated before he complimented Mrs. Bennet on having so fine a family of daughters, said he had heard much of their beauty, but that, in this instance, fame had fallen short of the truth; and added, that he did not doubt her seeing them all in due time well disposed of in marriage. This gallantry was not much to the taste of some of his hearers, but Mrs. Bennet who quarrelled with no compliments, answered most readily,

On p. 64, we read:

He was interrupted by a summons to dinner; and the girls smiled on each other. They were not the only objects of Mr. Collins's admiration. The hall, the

dining-room, and all its furniture were examined and praised; and his commendation of every thing would have touched Mrs. Bennet's heart, but for the mortifying supposition of his viewing it all as his own future property. The dinner too, in its turn, was highly admired; and he begged to know to which of his fair cousins, the excellence of its cookery was owing. But here he was set right by Mrs. Bennet, who assured him with some asperity that they were very well able to keep a good cook, and that her daughters had nothing to do in the kitchen. He begged pardon for having displeased her. In a softened tone she declared herself not at all offended; but he continued to apologise for about a quarter of an hour.

Mr. Collins' materialism shows itself here. He is very interested in material possessions.

We also see that Mr. Collins has been supposing that the Bennet family is poor, and so he assumes that one of the daughters has been cooking in the kitchen.

Chapter 14

• **Write a short character analysis of Miss Anne de Bourgh based on what you learn from this chapter.**

1. Miss De Bourgh is the daughter of Lady Catherine, which means that she is of very high status.
2. Miss De Bourgh is wealthy.
3. Miss De Bourgh is sickly.
4. Her mother thinks that she is beautiful.
5. Miss De Bourgh may be surrounded by yes-people who praise her although she has few accomplishments.

Certainly, Mr. Collins is a yes-man. The lady who superintends her education may be another.

On p. 66, we read:

“She is a most charming young lady indeed. Lady Catherine herself says that in point of true beauty, Miss De Bourgh is far superior to the handsomest of her sex; because there is that in her features which marks the young woman of distinguished birth. She is unfortunately of a sickly constitution, which has prevented her making that progress in many accomplishments which she could not otherwise have failed of; as I am informed by the lady who superintended her education, and who still resides with them. But she is perfectly amiable, and often condescends to drive by my humble abode in her little phaeton and ponies.”

Write a short character analysis of Mr. Collins based on what you learn from this chapter.

1. Mr. Collins is servile to Lady Catherine. He sucks up to her with compliments.

2. Mr. Bennet regards Mr. Collins as a fool. He succeeds in exposing Mr. Collins as a fool by asking about Lady Catherine. In particular, Mr. Collins is shown to be a fool by the compliments he makes. Most of them are not thought up ahead of time, but he also tries to think up compliments ahead of time, then deliver them as if they came to his mind at that moment.

3. Mr. Collins never reads novels. He instead reads aloud from a book of sermons, but when Lydia grows bored and begins to talk, he plays backgammon with Mr. Bennet instead.

Jane Austen, of course, is a novelist. She is in favor of reading novels.

On p. 67, we read:

Mr. Bennet's expectations were fully answered. His cousin was as absurd as he had hoped, and he listened to him with the keenest enjoyment, maintaining at the same time the most resolute composure of countenance, and, except in an occasional glance at Elizabeth, requiring no partner in his pleasure.

Write a short character analysis of Lydia based on what you learn from this chapter.

1. Lydia reads novels, and she and Catherine are shocked that Mr. Collins doesn't.

2. Lydia is bored by sermons.

3. Lydia is rude. Mr. Collins reads only three pages of a sermon, and Lydia begins to gossip about the soldiers. She isn't whispering.

On p. 67, we read:

By tea-time, however, the dose had been enough, and Mr. Bennet was glad to take his guest into the drawing-room again, and when tea was over, glad to invite him to read aloud to the ladies. Mr. Collins readily assented, and a book was produced; but on beholding it, (for every thing announced it to be from a circulating library,) he started back, and begging pardon, protested that he never read novels. Kitty stared at him, and Lydia exclaimed. Other books were produced, and after some deliberation he chose Fordyce's *Sermons*. Lydia gaped as he opened the volume, and before he had, with very monotonous solemnity, read three pages, she interrupted him with,

“Do you know, mama, that my uncle Philips talks of turning away Richard, and if he does, Colonel Forster will hire him. My aunt told me so herself on Saturday. I shall walk to Meryton to-morrow to hear more about it, and to ask when Mr. Denny comes back from town.”

Lydia was bid by her two eldest sisters to hold her tongue; but Mr. Collins, much offended, laid aside his book, and said,

Note: As you would expect, Jane Austen was in favor of reading novels, as this information (the bulleted items) from <http://www.pemberley.com/janeinfo/pptopics.html> shows:

- In a letter dated 18 December 1798, she wrote that she and the other members of her family were “great Novel-readers, & not ashamed of being so.”
- Her novel *Northanger Abbey* contains a “Defense of the Novel” and argues that novels are not trash.

- In Jane Austen's novels, the silliest, most foolish, and most obnoxious characters do not read novels. They include Mr. Collins in *Pride and Prejudice* and John Thorpe in *Northanger Abbey*. John Thorpe even says that novels "are the stupidest things in creation."

- Note: Fordyce's *Sermons to Young Women* (1766) contains conservative morality. In her *Women's Life and Work in the Southern Colonies*, Julia Cherry Spruill wrote about and quoted from Fordyce's *Sermons to Young Women*:

In these writings, which exalted the passive and negative qualities of character, and held up masculinity as the most displeasing characteristic ladies could possess, one finds some explanation of the exaggerated gender consciousness and unnatural manners of many women of the period. Dr. Fordyce's *Sermons to Young Women* was saturated with sentimentality. The author extolled the "submissive dependence", "timidity of temper", "lovely meekness", "modest pliancy", and "complacent deportment" of the female sex, and thus laid out the province of women: "Nature appears to have formed the [mental] faculties of your sex, for the most part, with less vigor than those of ours, observing the same distinction here as in the more delicate frame of your bodies... But you yourselves, I think, will allow that war, commerce, politics, exercises of strength and dexterity, abstract philosophy, and all the abstruser sciences, are most properly the province of men... Those masculine women that would plead for your sharing any part of this province equally with us, do not understand your true interests. There is an influence, there is an empire which belongs to you, and which I wish you ever to possess: I mean that which has the heart for its object and is secured by meekness, by soft

attraction, and virtuous love.” In spite of their exaggerated notions of feminine delicacy and unnatural standards of conduct, these books were exceedingly popular.

Source:

<http://www.pemberley.com/janeinfo/pptopics.html>

Chapter 15

Write a short character analysis of Mr. Collins based on what you learn in this chapter.

1. The author tells us that Mr. Collins is not a sensible man — meaning that he is not intelligent.
2. Mr. Collins has had some association with education and society, but they have not made him more intelligent.
3. Mr. Collins was brought up by an illiterate and miserly father.
4. Originally, Mr. Collins was truly humble — he had a lot to be humble about! — but now his humility is mixed with self-importance.
5. Mr. Collins is self-important although he has benefitted from luck. He met Lady Catherine, she gave him a living, and now he is servile toward her and puffed up with his own supposed importance.
6. The author tells us that Mr. Collins is “altogether a mixture of pride and obsequiousness, self-importance and humility” (69).
7. Mr. Collins wants to marry one of the Bennet daughters — if they are as pretty and pleasant as he has heard.
8. Mr. Collins is not in love with any of the Bennet daughters, as we can see in how quickly he changes from wanting to marry Jane to wanting to marry Elizabeth. Originally, Mr. Collins wanted to marry Jane as she is the most beautiful of the Bennet daughters, but he quickly switches to wanting to marry Elizabeth, who is the second prettiest of the Bennet daughters. He switches from Jane to Elizabeth after learning from Mrs. Bennet that Jane is likely to be soon engaged. He switches in the time that it takes for Mrs. Bennet to stir the fire (70).

9. Mr. Collins is a boring guest. He follows Mr. Bennet into the library and there bothers him. Mr. Collins is supposedly engaged in looking at a large book but instead talks constantly of his material possessions.

10. The author tells us that Mr. Collins is better suited to be a walker than a reader.

11. Mr. Collins apologizes way too much. We see that in the way he treats Mrs. Phillips.

On p. 69, we read:

Mr. Collins was not a sensible man, and the deficiency of nature had been but little assisted by education or society; the greatest part of his life having been spent under the guidance of an illiterate and miserly father; and though he belonged to one of the universities, he had merely kept the necessary terms, without forming at it any useful acquaintance. The subjection in which his father had brought him up had given him originally great humility of manner, but it was now a good deal counteracted by the self-conceit of a weak head, living in retirement, and the consequential feelings of early and unexpected prosperity. A fortunate chance had recommended him to Lady Catherine de Bourgh when the living of Hunsford was vacant; and the respect which he felt for her high rank and his veneration for her as his patroness, mingling with a very good opinion of himself, of his authority as a clergyman, and his rights as a rector, made him altogether a mixture of pride and obsequiousness, self-importance and humility.

Having now a good house and very sufficient income, he intended to marry; and in seeking a reconciliation with the Longbourn family he had a

wife in view, as he meant to choose one of the daughters, if he found them as handsome and amiable as they were represented by common report. This was his plan of amends — of atonement — for inheriting their father's estate; and he thought it an excellent one, full of eligibility and suitableness, and excessively generous and disinterested on his own part.

On p. 70, we read:

Mr. Collins had only to change from Jane to Elizabeth — and it was soon done — done while Mrs. Bennet was stirring the fire. Elizabeth, equally next to Jane in birth and beauty, succeeded her of course.

On p. 70, we read:

Lydia's intention of walking to Meryton was not forgotten; every sister except Mary agreed to go with her; and Mr. Collins was to attend them, at the request of Mr. Bennet, who was most anxious to get rid of him, and have his library to himself; for thither Mr. Collins had followed him after breakfast, and there he would continue, nominally engaged with one of the largest folios in the collection, but really talking to Mr. Bennet, with little cessation, of his house and garden at Hunsford.

On p. 72, we read:

She received him with her very best politeness, which he returned with as much more, apologising for his intrusion without any previous acquaintance with her, which he could not help flattering himself however might be justified by his relationship to the young ladies who introduced him to her notice. Mrs.

Philips was quite awed by such an excess of good breeding; [...]

Why has Mr. Collins come to visit the Bennet family?

Mr. Collins has come to the Bennets in search of a wife. He has heard that the Bennet daughters are pretty and pleasant, and so he has come to marry one of them.

Mr. Collins feels that the Bennet family will welcome such a marriage. Their house is entailed to him, and marriage is one way to keep the house in the family. This is OK, but love does not depend on financial matters, and marriage ought not to depend on financial matters. Mr. Collins is so materialistic that he feels that the Bennet family will be materialistic as well.

Of course, Mr. Collins is not in love with any of the Bennet daughters. He finds them attractive, wants to marry Jane, but quickly switches to wanting to marry Elizabeth after Mrs. Bennet tells him that Jane is likely to soon be engaged.

How important is Mr. Bennet's library to him?

It is very important to him. It is a garden of sensibility in a house with little sensibility — except for Mr. Bennet, Elizabeth, and Jane.

Mr. Bennet does not mind meeting with stupidity in any other room in his house, but he feels that in his own library he ought to be safe from stupidity. That is why he is anxious for Mr. Collins to go walking with his daughters rather than sitting in his library talking to Mr. Bennet instead of reading.

On p. 70, we read:

Lydia's intention of walking to Meryton was not forgotten; every sister except Mary agreed to go with her; and Mr. Collins was to attend them, at the request of Mr. Bennet, who was most anxious to get

rid of him, and have his library to himself; for thither Mr. Collins had followed him after breakfast, and there he would continue, nominally engaged with one of the largest folios in the collection, but really talking to Mr. Bennet, with little cessation, of his house and garden at Hunsford. Such doings discomposed Mr. Bennet exceedingly. In his library he had been always sure of leisure and tranquillity; and though prepared, as he told Elizabeth, to meet with folly and conceit in every other room in the house, he was used to be free from them there; his civility, therefore, was most prompt in inviting Mr. Collins to join his daughters in their walk; and Mr. Collins, being in fact much better fitted for a walker than a reader, was extremely well pleased to close his large book, and go.

**What do we learn about Mr. Wickham in this chapter?
How do Mr. Wickham and Mr. Darcy greet each other?**

1. Mr. Wickham is a young man.
2. Mr. Wickham has come from London, and he is to be a lieutenant with the militia stationed at Meryton.
3. Mr. Wickham makes a remarkable first impression.
4. Mr. Wickham is handsome. He has a good figure. He speaks well.
5. Mr. Wickham engages in conversation well.
6. Mr. Wickham and Mr. Darcy know each other, but apparently there have been problems between them in the past, as they do not greet each other as friends. Mr. Wickham touches his hat, and Mr. Darcy barely returns the gesture. One gentleman turns white; the other turns red. Apparently, one gentleman is angry; the other is frightened.

On pp. 71-72, we read:

But the attention of every lady was soon caught by a young man, whom they had never seen before, of most gentlemanlike appearance, walking with an officer on the other side of the way. The officer was the very Mr. Denny, concerning whose return from London Lydia came to inquire, and he bowed as they passed. All were struck with the stranger's air, all wondered who he could be, and Kitty and Lydia, determined if possible to find out, led the way across the street, under pretence of wanting something in an opposite shop, and fortunately had just gained the pavement when the two gentlemen, turning back, had reached the same spot. Mr. Denny addressed them directly, and entreated permission to introduce his friend, Mr. Wickham, who had returned with him the day before from town, and he was happy to say, had accepted a commission in their corps. This was exactly as it should be; for the young man wanted only regimentals to make him completely charming. His appearance was greatly in his favour; he had all the best part of beauty — a fine countenance, a good figure, and very pleasing address. The introduction was followed up on his side by a happy readiness of conversation — a readiness at the same time perfectly correct and unassuming; and the whole party were still standing and talking together very agreeably, when the sound of horses drew their notice, and Darcy and Bingley were seen riding down the street. On distinguishing the ladies of the group, the two gentlemen came directly towards them, and began the usual civilities. Bingley was the principal spokesman, and Miss Bennet the principal object. He was then, he said, on his way to Longbourn on purpose to inquire after her. Mr. Darcy

corroborated it with a bow, and was beginning to determine not to fix his eyes on Elizabeth, when they were suddenly arrested by the sight of the stranger, and Elizabeth happening to see the countenance of both as they looked at each other, was all astonishment at the effect of the meeting. Both changed colour, one looked white, the other red. Mr. Wickham, after a few moments, touched his hat — a salutation which Mr. Darcy just deigned to return. What could be the meaning of it? It was impossible to imagine; it was impossible not to long to know.

What do we learn about Mrs. Phillips in this chapter?

Mrs. Phillips is a sister of Mrs. Bennet.

1. Mrs. Phillips is happy to see her nieces.
2. Mrs. Phillips is impressed by the soldiers. She is nosy. She watches — for an hour — Mr. Wickham walk up and down.
3. Mrs. Phillips is a bit of a gossip. She gossips with Lydia and Kitty.
4. Mrs. Phillips entertains guests and likes games and other amusements.
5. Mrs. Phillips is impressed by Mr. Collins' manners.

On pp. 72-73, we read:

Mrs. Philips was always glad to see her nieces, and the two eldest, from their recent absence, were particularly welcome, and she was eagerly expressing her surprise at their sudden return home, which, as their own carriage had not fetched them, she should have known nothing about, if she had not happened to see Mr. Jones's shop boy in the street, who had told her that they were not to send any more draughts to Netherfield because the Miss Bennets

were come away, when her civility was claimed towards Mr. Collins by Jane's introduction of him. She received him with her very best politeness, which he returned with as much more, apologising for his intrusion without any previous acquaintance with her, which he could not help flattering himself, however, might be justified by his relationship to the young ladies who introduced him to her notice. Mrs. Philips was quite awed by such an excess of good breeding; but her contemplation of one stranger was soon put an end to by exclamations and inquiries about the other, of whom, however, she could only tell her nieces what they already knew, that Mr. Denny had brought him from London, and that he was to have a lieutenant's commission in the — — shire. She had been watching him the last hour, she said, as he walked up and down the street, and had Mr. Wickham appeared, Kitty and Lydia would certainly have continued the occupation, but unluckily no one passed the windows now except a few of the officers, who in comparison with the stranger, were become "stupid, disagreeable fellows." Some of them were to dine with the Philipses the next day, and their aunt promised to make her husband call on Mr. Wickham, and give him an invitation also, if the family from Longbourn would come in the evening. This was agreed to, and Mrs. Philips protested that they would have a nice comfortable noisy game of lottery tickets, and a little bit of hot supper afterwards. The prospect of such delights was very cheering, and they parted in mutual good spirits. Mr. Collins repeated his apologies in quitting the room, and was assured with unwearied civility that they were perfectly needless.

Chapter 16

Write a short character analysis of Mr. Collins based on what you learn in this chapter.

1. Mr. Collins gives poor compliments.

He compares Mrs. Phillips's sitting room with the "small summer breakfast parlour at Rosings" (p. 74). This is not much of a compliment, and at first Mrs. Phillips feels insulted; however, when Mr. Collins explains how rich Lady Catherine is and how richly furnished Rosings is, she does feel complimented.

2. Mr. Collins is not well regarded by the young ladies.

When other gentlemen, such as Mr. Wickham, are around, the young ladies — including Elizabeth — are very happy to speak to the other gentlemen.

On pp. 74-75, we read:

To the girls, who could not listen to their cousin, and who had nothing to do but to wish for an instrument, and examine their own indifferent imitations of china on the mantelpiece, the interval of waiting appeared very long. It was over at last, however.

Note: The word "instrument" refers to a piano.

3. Mr. Collins is a boor.

He has little to talk about on the way home, but he talks constantly nevertheless.

On pp. 82-83, we read:

She [Elizabeth] could think of nothing but of Mr. Wickham, and of what he had told her, all the way home; but there was not time for her even to mention his name as they went, for neither Lydia nor Mr.

Collins were once silent. Lydia talked incessantly of lottery tickets, of the fish she had lost and the fish she had won, and Mr. Collins, in describing the civility of Mr. and Mrs. Philips, protesting that he did not in the least regard his losses at whist, enumerating all the dishes at supper, and repeatedly fearing that he crowded his cousins, had more to say than he could well manage before the carriage stopped at Longbourn House.

Note: Lydia was playing a card game. “Fish” are similar to tokens used in gambling. We will find that an important character in *Pride and Prejudice* is a “gamester” (gambler) with “debts of honor” (losses at gambling, which are debts of honor because they are not legally enforceable).

What does Mr. Wickham say about Mr. Darcy? Does he say anything good about Mr. Darcy — even though he tries to make it sound bad?

1. Mr. Wickham says that Mr. Darcy is proud.
2. Basically, Mr. Wickham says that Mr. Darcy hates him and therefore treats him badly.
3. Mr. Wickham says that Mr. Darcy went directly against the wishes of his late father in denying him (Mr. Wickham) the living as a clergyman that he was promised.

However, although Mr. Wickham badmouths Mr. Darcy, much of what he says about him is good, although he tries to make it sound bad.

1. Mr. Darcy gives his money freely, displays hospitality, assists his tenants, and relieves the poor (80). Mr. Wickham says that he does this because of pride.
2. Mr. Darcy is “a very kind and careful guardian of his sister” (80). Mr. Darcy is “generally cried up as the most

attentive and best of brothers” (80). Mr. Wickham says that he does this because of pride.

3. Mr. Darcy “can please where he chooses” (81). Mr. Wickham says that he does this because of pride — he chooses to please only when he is around rich people.

On p. 80, we read:

“Can such abominable pride as his, have ever done him good?”

“Yes. It has often led him to be liberal and generous, to give his money freely, to display hospitality, to assist his tenants, and relieve the poor. Family pride, and *filial* pride, for he is very proud of what his father was, have done this. Not to appear to disgrace his family, to degenerate from the popular qualities, or lose the influence of the Pemberley House, is a powerful motive. He has also *brotherly* pride, which with *some* brotherly affection, makes him a very kind and careful guardian of his sister; and you will hear him generally cried up as the most attentive and best of brothers.”

On p. 81, we read:

[Elizabeth:] “He [Mr. Bingley] is a sweet tempered, amiable, charming man. He cannot know what Mr. Darcy is.”

[Mr. Wickham:] “Probably not; but Mr. Darcy can please where he chooses. He does not want abilities. He can be a conversible companion if he thinks it worth his while. Among those who are at all his equals in consequence, he is a very different man from what he is to the less prosperous. His pride never deserts him; but with the rich, he is liberal-minded, just, sincere, rational, honourable, and

perhaps agreeable, allowing something for fortune and figure.”

What does Mr. Wickham say about himself?

Mr. Wickham feels himself to be much abused by Mr. Darcy. According to Mr. Wickham, he was raised up to go into the clergy, and a valuable living as a clergyman (such as Mr. Collins has) was promised to him by Mr. Darcy’s deceased father; however, when the living became vacant, at a time when Mr. Wickham was old enough to occupy it, Mr. Darcy gave it to someone else.

Mr. Wickham does give an explanation for why this occurred (78):

“Good heavens!” cried Elizabeth; “but how could *that* be? How could his will be disregarded? Why did not you seek legal redress?”

“There was just such an informality in the terms of the bequest as to give me no hope from law. A man of honour could not have doubted the intention, but Mr. Darcy chose to doubt it — or to treat it as a merely conditional recommendation, and to assert that I had forfeited all claim to it by extravagance, imprudence, in short anything or nothing. Certain it is, that the living became vacant two years ago, exactly as I was of an age to hold it, and that it was given to another man; and no less certain is it, that I cannot accuse myself of having really done anything to deserve to lose it. I have a warm, unguarded temper, and I may perhaps have sometimes spoken my opinion *of* him, and *to* him, too freely. I can recall nothing worse. But the fact is, that we are very different sort of men, and that he hates me.”

Of course, having a “warm, unguarded temper” (78) can be regarded as a virtue, not a vice.

Basically, Mr. Wickham says that Mr. Darcy hates him and therefore treats him badly.

How does Elizabeth regard Mr. Wickham?

1. Elizabeth is impressed by Mr. Wickham. His looks, his conversation, and his stories have all impressed her.

2. Elizabeth believes all that Mr. Wickham tells her. In believing Mr. Wickham, she is influenced by Mr. Darcy's pride. Mr. Darcy's pride makes Mr. Wickham's stories easy to believe.

3. Elizabeth is uncritical of Mr. Wickham, but she could be very well be critical of what Mr. Wickham says.

A. When Elizabeth says Mr. Darcy ought to be exposed for the rascal Mr. Wickham has told her he is, Mr. Wickham says that he will never expose Mr. Darcy. Of course, that is exactly what he has been doing in talking to Elizabeth.

On p. 69, we read:

[Elizabeth:] "This is quite shocking! He deserves to be publicly disgraced."

[Mr. Wickham:] "Some time or other he *will* be — but it shall not be by *me*. Till I can forget his father, I can never defy or expose *him*."

B. Although Mr. Wickham says that it gives him pain to speak ill of a Darcy, he badmouths two Darcys during his talk with Elizabeth. In addition to badmouthing Mr. Darcy, he badmouths Mr. Darcy's young sister.

On p. 80, Mr. Wickham says:

He shook his head. "I wish I could call her amiable. It gives me pain to speak ill of a Darcy. But she is too much like her brother — very, very proud. — As a child, she was affectionate and pleasing, and

extremely fond of me; and I have devoted hours and hours to her amusement. But she is nothing to me now. She is a handsome girl, about fifteen or sixteen, and, I understand, highly accomplished. Since her father's death, her home has been London, where a lady lives with her, and superintends her education."

Chapter 17

What is Jane's opinion of what the relationship between Mr. Darcy and Mr. Wickham?

Jane is a trusting soul who thinks that neither Mr. Darcy can be so bad as Mr. Wickham has represented him nor Mr. Wickham would deliberately lie about such actions. Therefore, she thinks that interested parties (84) must have deceived one person to the other.

Elizabeth, of course, realizes how kind and trusting Jane is, and she laughingly asks her to clear the interested parties or Jane and she will have to think ill of someone.

Elizabeth finds herself believing Mr. Wickham's account of events.

On pp. 84-85, we read:

[Jane:] "They have both," said she, "been deceived, I dare say, in some way or other, of which we can form no idea. Interested people have perhaps misrepresented each to the other. It is, in short, impossible for us to conjecture the causes or circumstances which may have alienated them, without actual blame on either side."

[Elizabeth:] "Very true, indeed; and now, my dear Jane, what have you got to say in behalf of the interested people who have probably been concerned in the business? Do clear *them* too, or we shall be obliged to think ill of somebody."

"Laugh as much as you choose, but you will not laugh me out of my opinion. My dearest Lizzy, do but consider in what a disgraceful light it places Mr. Darcy, to be treating his father's favourite in such a manner, one whom his father had promised to

provide for. It is impossible. No man of common humanity, no man who had any value for his character, could be capable of it. Can his most intimate friends be so excessively deceived in him? oh! no.”

“I can much more easily believe Mr. Bingley’s being imposed on, than that Mr. Wickham should invent such a history of himself as he gave me last night; names, facts, every thing mentioned without ceremony. If it be not so, let Mr. Darcy contradict it. Besides, there was truth in his looks.”

In your opinion, would Mr. Collins and Elizabeth have a good marriage? Does Mr. Collins think so? Does Elizabeth?

Mr. Collins regards Elizabeth as a suitable wife for himself. She, however, does not regard Mr. Collins as a suitable husband for herself.

They would NOT have a good marriage.

Elizabeth is a woman of wit and intelligence. Mr. Collins is a fool.

Mr. Collins pursues Elizabeth, clumsily. Elizabeth wants to dance the first two dances with Mr. Wickham. Unfortunately, Mr. Collins asks her for the first two dances. Elizabeth accepts out of politeness, but she is bitterly disappointed.

Unfortunately for Elizabeth, Mrs. Bennet is in favor of Elizabeth and Mr. Collins marrying. There is a good financial reason for it, but no other good reason. Mrs. Bennet drops a hint to Elizabeth, but Elizabeth ignores the hint, knowing that a quarrel would break out. Elizabeth hopes that Mr. Collins will decide not to ask her to marry him.

On pp. 86-87, we read:

Elizabeth felt herself completely taken in. She had fully proposed being engaged by Wickham for those very dances — and to have Mr. Collins instead! Her liveliness had been never worse timed. There was no help for it, however. Mr. Wickham's happiness and her own was perforce delayed a little longer, and Mr. Collins's proposal accepted with as good a grace as she could. She was not the better pleased with his gallantry from the idea it suggested of something more. It now first struck her that *she* was selected from among her sisters as worthy of being the mistress of Hunsford Parsonage, and of assisting to form a quadrille table at Rosings, in the absence of more eligible visitors. The idea soon reached to conviction, as she observed his increasing civilities toward herself, and heard his frequent attempt at a compliment on her wit and vivacity; and though more astonished than gratified herself by this effect of her charms, it was not long before her mother gave her to understand that the probability of their marriage was exceedingly agreeable to *her*. Elizabeth, however, did not choose to take the hint, being well aware that a serious dispute must be the consequence of any reply. Mr. Collins might never make the offer, and till he did, it was useless to quarrel about him.

Chapter 18

Why doesn't Mr. Wickham show up for the ball? Does this contradict anything he said in chapter 16?

Mr. Wickham does not show up for the ball at Netherfield. He could have if he had wished, but Mr. Denny tells us that he wished to avoid someone. That someone, of course, is Mr. Darcy.

Earlier, in chapter 16, Mr. Wickham had said that he would not avoid Mr. Darcy, that if Mr. Darcy wished to avoid him, he might leave instead.

On p. 77, we read:

[Elizabeth:] “I do not at all know; but I *heard* nothing of his going away when I was at Netherfield. I hope your plans in favour of the — — shire will not be affected by his being in the neighbourhood.”

[Mr. Wickham:] “Oh! no — it is not for *me* to be driven away by Mr. Darcy. If *he* wishes to avoid seeing *me*, he must go. We are not on friendly terms, and it always gives me pain to meet him, but I have no reason for avoiding *him* but what I might proclaim to all the world: a sense of very great ill-usage, and most painful regrets at his being what he is.

On p. 88, we read:

Till Elizabeth entered the drawing-room at Netherfield and looked in vain for Mr. Wickham among the cluster of red coats there assembled, a doubt of his being present had never occurred to her. The certainty of meeting him had not been checked by any of those recollections that might not unreasonably have alarmed her. She had dressed with more than usual care, and prepared in the highest

spirits for the conquest of all that remained unsubdued of his heart, trusting that it was not more than might be won in the course of the evening. But in an instant arose the dreadful suspicion of his being purposely omitted for Mr. Darcy's pleasure in the Bingleys' invitation to the officers; and though this was not exactly the case, the absolute fact of his absence was pronounced by his friend Mr. Denny, to whom Lydia eagerly applied, and who told them that Wickham had been obliged to go to town on business the day before, and was not yet returned; adding, with a significant smile,

“I do not imagine his business would have called him away just now, if he had not wished to avoid a certain gentleman here.”

Which new opinions of Mr. Wickham does Elizabeth run across at the ball? How is she affected by them, if at all?

1. Elizabeth hears from an officer that Mr. Wickham is universally liked.

On p. 89, we read:

She danced next with an officer, and had the refreshment of talking of Wickham, and of hearing that he was universally liked.

2. Of course, Elizabeth hears a negative opinion of Mr. Wickham from Mr. Darcy.

On p. 91, we read:

[Mr. Darcy:] “Mr. Wickham is blessed with such happy manners as may ensure his *making* friends — whether he may be equally capable of *retaining* them, is less certain.”

“He has been so unlucky as to lose *your* friendship,” replied Elizabeth with emphasis, “and in a manner which he is likely to suffer from all his life.”

Darcy made no answer, and seemed desirous of changing the subject.

3. Miss Bingley tells Elizabeth negative things about Mr. Wickham. She stresses Mr. Wickham’s low birth.

On p. 93, we read:

“So, Miss Eliza, I hear you are quite delighted with George Wickham! Your sister has been talking to me about him, and asking me a thousand questions; and I find that the young man forgot to tell you, among his other communications, that he was the son of old Wickham, the late Mr. Darcy’s steward. Let me recommend you, however, as a friend, not to give implicit confidence to all his assertions; for as to Mr. Darcy’s using him ill, it is perfectly false; for, on the contrary, he has been always remarkably kind to him, though George Wickham has treated Mr. Darcy in a most infamous manner. I do not know the particulars, but I know very well that Mr. Darcy is not in the least to blame, that he cannot bear to hear George Wickham mentioned, and that though my brother thought he could not well avoid including him in his invitation to the officers, he was excessively glad to find that he had taken himself out of the way. His coming into the country at all is a most insolent thing indeed, and I wonder how he could presume to do it. I pity you, Miss Eliza, for this discovery of your favorite’s guilt; but really, considering his descent one could not expect much better.”

4. Jane has talked to Mr. Bingley and has heard bad things about Mr. Wickham. However, Mr. Bingley's source of information is Mr. Darcy.

On p. 94, we read:

“No,” replied Jane, “I have not forgotten him; but I have nothing satisfactory to tell you. Mr. Bingley does not know the whole of his history, and is quite ignorant of the circumstances which have principally offended Mr. Darcy; but he will vouch for the good conduct, the probity and honour of his friend, and is perfectly convinced that Mr. Wickham has deserved much less attention from Mr. Darcy than he has received; and I am sorry to say that by his account as well as his sister's, Mr. Wickham is by no means a respectable young man. I am afraid he has been very imprudent, and has deserved to lose Mr. Darcy's regard.”

Sir William Lucas refers to “a certain desirable event” when talking to Mr. Darcy. To what is he referring?

He is referring to what he thinks will be an impending engagement between Jane and Mr. Bingley. We know that because of a significant glance he throws to Elizabeth.

On p. 91, we read:

“I have been most highly gratified indeed, my dear Sir. Such very superior dancing is not often seen. It is evident that you belong to the first circles. Allow me to say, however, that your fair partner does not disgrace you, and that I must hope to have this pleasure often repeated, especially when a certain desirable event, my dear Miss Eliza (glancing at her sister and Bingley), shall take place. What congratulations will then flow in! I appeal to Mr. Darcy — but let me not interrupt you, Sir. You will

not thank me for detaining you from the bewitching converse of that young lady, whose bright eyes are also upbraiding me.”

Most of the members of Elizabeth’s family embarrass her at the ball. Why? Is Elizabeth’s embarrassment justified?

Mrs. Bennet

1. Mrs. Bennet can talk of nothing at the supper table except her expectation that Mr. Bingley and Jane will soon be engaged. This is embarrassing to Elizabeth because such a supposed engagement should not be talked about openly until the engagement occurs.

In addition, Mr. Darcy overhears what Mrs. Bennet is saying, so that he is able to know that she expects Mr. Bingley and Jane to be married soon.

2. Mrs. Bennet also pulls a maneuver that makes them wait for their carriage 15 minutes after everyone has left. This means that the Bennets are forced to listen as Miss Bingley and Mrs. Hurst talk of exhaustion and clearly want the Bennets to go home.

Mary

Mary sings for everyone, and takes a bare hint that she should sing again. Unfortunately, she is not a good singer, and her manner is affected.

Mr. Bennet

Mr. Bennet asks Mary to stop singing and to let the other young ladies have a chance at singing. I find it difficult to find fault with Mr. Bennet. Elizabeth is sorry for her father’s little speech, but perhaps she is merely sorry that he had to make such a speech. However, perhaps the comment “Let the other young ladies have time to exhibit” is rude, hinting

as it does that the other young ladies want to put themselves on display.

On p. 98, Mr. Bennet says,

“That will do extremely well, child. You have delighted us long enough. Let the other young ladies have time to exhibit.”

Mr. Bennet does look amused at Mr. Collins’ silly speech — Mr. Bennet may definitely be regarded here as being rude.

Jane

Jane does nothing wrong. She stays composed, and she talks to Mr. Bingley.

Mr. Collins

Mr. Collins is not an immediate member of the family, but he is related. He makes one of his speeches. Mrs. Bennet thinks that it is sensible, but she is hardly a good judge of sensibility.

In his speech, Mr. Collins makes it clear that he is very willing to suck up to his patroness.

Mr. Collins speaks to Mr. Darcy without having first been introduced, which is very rude in this society.

On p. 99, we read:

“[...] And I do not think it of light importance that he should have attentive and conciliatory manners towards everybody, especially towards those to whom he owes his preferment. I cannot acquit him of that duty; nor could I think well of the man who should omit an occasion of testifying his respect towards anybody connected with the family.” And with a bow to Mr. Darcy, he concluded his speech, which had been spoken so loud as to be heard by half

the room. Many stared. Many smiled; but no one looked more amused than Mr. Bennet himself, while his wife seriously commended Mr. Collins for having spoken so sensibly, and observed in a half-whisper to Lady Lucas, that he was a remarkably clever, good kind of young man.

How does Mr. Collins acquit himself at the ball?

1. Mr. Collins can't dance.

On p. 89, we read:

The two first dances, however, brought a return of distress; they were dances of mortification. Mr. Collins, awkward and solemn, apologizing instead of attending, and often moving wrong without being aware of it, gave her all the shame and misery which a disagreeable partner for a couple of dances can give. The moment of her release from him was ecstasy.

2. Mr. Collins speaks to Mr. Darcy without having first been introduced.

In this culture, that is taking a very great liberty. Mr. Collins should be introduced to Mr. Darcy before speaking to him. Mr. Darcy is shocked and angry that Mr. Collins should speak to him without being formally introduced.

Mr. Darcy is the superior to Mr. Collins; therefore, if the two are to be introduced, it is Mr. Darcy who should take the initiative.

Mr. Collins is determined to introduce himself to Mr. Darcy for two reasons:

1. He has news about Mr. Darcy's aunt — she was well the last time he saw her.

2. He is a clergyman.

Even clergymen, however, are subject to rules of etiquette. People of the time would be shocked that Mr. Collins speaks to Mr. Darcy without first being introduced.

Mr. Collins could easily have waited to be introduced to Mr. Darcy. Mr. Bingley would have been happy to be introduced to Mr. Collins (if he hasn't already), and he could have introduced Mr. Collins and Mr. Darcy.

3. Mr. Collins misunderstands Mr. Darcy's reception of him.

Mr. Collins thinks that he has been cordially received by Mr. Darcy, but Elizabeth can see that Mr. Darcy is actually insulted by Mr. Collins' speaking to him without having been introduced first.

4. Mr. Collins ruins the ball for Elizabeth. Not only is he a bad dancer, but after supper he sticks close to her, so that she isn't able to dance with anyone else.

On p. 95, we read:

[Elizabeth:] "You are not going to introduce yourself to Mr. Darcy?"

[Mr. Collins:] "Indeed I am. I shall intreat his pardon for not having done it earlier. I believe him to be Lady Catherine's *nephew*. It will be in my power to assure him that her ladyship was quite well yesterday se'nnight."

Elizabeth tried hard to dissuade him from such a scheme; assuring him that Mr. Darcy would consider his addressing him without introduction as an impertinent freedom, rather than a compliment to his aunt; that it was not in the least necessary there should be any notice on either side, and that if it

were, it must belong to Mr. Darcy, the superior in consequence, to begin the acquaintance.

On p. 96, we read:

And with a low bow he left her to attack Mr. Darcy, whose reception of his advances she eagerly watched, and whose astonishment at being so addressed was very evident. Her cousin prefaced his speech with a solemn bow, and though she could not hear a word of it, she felt as if hearing it all, and saw in the motion of his lips the words “apology,” “Hunsford,” and “Lady Catherine de Bourgh.” It vexed her to see him expose himself to such a man. Mr. Darcy was eyeing him with unrestrained wonder, and when at last Mr. Collins allowed him time to speak, replied with an air of distant civility. Mr. Collins, however, was not discouraged from speaking again, and Mr. Darcy’s contempt seemed abundantly increasing with the length of his second speech, and at the end of it he only made him a slight bow, and moved another way. Mr. Collins then returned to Elizabeth.

On pp. 99-100, we read:

The rest of the evening brought her little amusement. She was teased by Mr. Collins, who continued most perseveringly by her side, and though he could not prevail with her to dance with him again, put it out of her power to dance with others. In vain did she entreat him to stand up with somebody else, and offer to introduce him to any young lady in the room. He assured her that as to dancing, he was perfectly indifferent to it; that his chief object was by delicate attentions to recommend himself to her, and that he should therefore make a point of remaining close to her the whole evening. There was no arguing upon

such a project. She owed her greatest relief to her friend Miss Lucas, who often joined them, and good-naturedly engaged Mr. Collins's conversation to herself.

What do we learn about Jane's character in this chapter?

Jane is either falling in love or is in love with Mr. Bingley.

Jane is very happy at the ball.

On pp. 93-94, we read:

Jane met her with a smile of such sweet complacency, a glow of such happy expression, as sufficiently marked how well she was satisfied with the occurrences of the evening. Elizabeth instantly read her feelings, and at that moment solicitude for Wickham, resentment against his enemies and everything else gave way before the hope of Jane's being in the fairest way for happiness.

On pp. 94-95, we read:

She then changed the discourse to one more gratifying to each, and on which there could be no difference of sentiment. Elizabeth listened with delight to the happy, though modest hopes which Jane entertained of Bingley's regard, and said all in her power to heighten her confidence in it. On their being joined by Mr. Bingley himself, Elizabeth withdrew to Miss Lucas; to whose inquiry after the pleasantness of her last partner she had scarcely replied, before Mr. Collins came up to them and told her with great exultation that he had just been so fortunate as to make a most important discovery.

Chapter 19

What is your opinion of Mr. Collins' marriage proposal to Elizabeth?

The marriage proposal is silly, and so is Mr. Collins.

He begins by saying that of course she knows why he asked her mother to let her be alone with him — that he wants to marry her.

He then says that he will tell her his reasons for wanting to marry her before he is “run away with by his feelings” (103) — an image that makes Elizabeth almost laugh because Mr. Collins is so solemn.

Mr. Collins' reasons for wanting to marry Elizabeth are these:

1. Clergymen ought to be married.

On p. 103, we read:

My reasons for marrying are, first, that I think it a right thing for every clergyman in easy circumstances (like myself) to set the example of matrimony in his parish.

2. Mr. Collins thinks that being married will make **him** happy.

On p. 103, we read:

Secondly, that I am convinced it will add very greatly to my happiness;

3. Lady Catherine wants him to be married.

On pp. 103-104, we read:

and thirdly — which perhaps I ought to have mentioned earlier — that it is the particular advice

and recommendation of the very noble lady whom I have the honour of calling patroness. Twice has she condescended to give me her opinion (unasked too!) on this subject; and it was but the very Saturday night before I left Hunsford — between our pools at quadrille, while Mrs. Jenkinson was arranging Miss de Bourgh's foot-stool, that she said, "Mr. Collins, you must marry. A clergyman like you must marry. Choose properly, choose a gentlewoman for *my* sake; and for your *own*, let her be an active, useful sort of person, not brought up high, but able to make a small income go a good way. This is my advice. Find such a woman as soon as you can, bring her to Hunsford, and I will visit her." Allow me, by the way, to observe, my fair cousin, that I do not reckon the notice and kindness of Lady Catherine de Bourgh as among the least of the advantages in my power to offer. You will find her manners beyond anything I can describe; and your wit and vivacity I think must be acceptable to her, especially when tempered with the silence and respect which her rank will inevitably excite.

Note that Mr. Collins praises Elizabeth's wit and vivacity, but he also says that they ought to be tempered by silence and respect.

A. One cannot be witty when one is silent.

B. One cannot be vivacious when one is respectful. To be *vivacious* is to be lively, to be full of animation, to be spiritely.

4. Mr. Collins then says that he wants to marry one of the Bennet daughters because of the entail.

On p. 104, we read:

Thus much for my general intention in favour of matrimony; it remains to be told why my views were directed to Longbourn instead of my own neighbourhood, where I assure you there are many amiable young women. But the fact is, that being, as I am, to inherit this estate after the death of your honoured father (who, however, may live many years longer), I could not satisfy myself without resolving to choose a wife from among his daughters, that the loss to them might be as little as possible, when the melancholy event takes place — which, however, as I have already said, may not be for several years. This has been my motive, my fair cousin, and I flatter myself it will not sink me in your esteem.

5. Mr. Collins says that he doesn't care about Elizabeth's lack of fortune. Mr. Collins is materialistic, and he is well aware of the finances that Elizabeth can — and cannot — bring to him.

On p. 104, we read:

And now nothing remains for me but to assure you in the most animated language of the violence of my affection. To fortune I am perfectly indifferent, and shall make no demand of that nature on your father, since I am well aware that it could not be complied with; and that one thousand pounds in the 4 percents, which will not be yours till after your mother's decease, is all that you may ever be entitled to. On that head, therefore, I shall be uniformly silent; and you may assure yourself that no ungenerous reproach shall ever pass my lips when we are married."

If Mr. Collins wished to make a good marriage proposal, what should he say and not say? (If you wish, make up a list of Things to Do and Things Not to Do.)

Do's

- Tell Elizabeth that he loves her.
- Tell Elizabeth that he can't live without her.
- Tell Elizabeth that she is beautiful.
- Tell Elizabeth that it makes him feel alive and happy to be around her.
- Tell Elizabeth that he will do everything in his power to make **her** happy.
- Talk about what a good catch **she** is.

Don'ts

- Don't talk about money.
- Don't talk about Lady Catherine.
- Don't talk about "reasons" (103) for being married.
- Don't talk about what a good catch **he** is.

Is Elizabeth right to decline Mr. Collins' offer of marriage?

Absolutely.

Mr. Collins is not a good match for her.

What does Mr. Collins say in response to Elizabeth's refusal of his proposal?

Mr. Collins does not believe Elizabeth when she declines his proposal of marriage to her.

On p. 106, we read:

You must give me leave to flatter myself, my dear cousin, that your refusal of my addresses is merely words of course.

He gives a number of reasons why he does not believe her:

1. Mr. Collins thinks that he is a good catch for Elizabeth and that his property and his relationship with the de Bourghs are good reasons for her to accept him.

On p. 106, we read:

My reasons for believing it are briefly these: It does not appear to me that my hand is unworthy your acceptance, or that the establishment I can offer would be any other than highly desirable. My situation in life, my connections with the family of De Bourgh, and my relationship to your own, are circumstances highly in its favor; [...]

2. Mr. Collins thinks that there is a good chance that Elizabeth may not receive another proposal of marriage as her wealth is small.

On p. 106, we read:

and you should take it into farther consideration that in spite of your manifold attractions, it is by no means certain that another offer of marriage may ever be made you. Your portion is unhappily so small that it will in all likelihood undo the effects of your loveliness and amiable qualifications.

3. Mr. Collins thinks that Elizabeth is an elegant female and that therefore she is teasing him and will accept him when he proposes a second or a third time.

On p. 106, we read:

As I must therefore conclude that you are not serious in your rejection of me, I shall choose to attribute it to your wish of increasing my love by suspense, according to the usual practice of elegant females.”

Note: Mr. Collins knows little about women in general, and he knows little about Elizabeth in particular. Mr. Collins seems incapable of feeling romantic love. For him, marriage is an arrangement to be made for one’s own comfort rather than a relationship of love between two people.

Chapter 20

How do Mr. and Mrs. Bennet each react to Elizabeth's refusal of Mr. Collins' marriage proposal?

Mrs. Bennet

Mrs. Bennet regards Elizabeth as her least favorite daughter, and she regards Mr. Collins as a good catch — for financial reasons. After all, Longbourn is entailed to him.

Mrs. Bennet says that if Elizabeth does not marry Mr. Collins, she will never see her again.

Mr. Bennet

Mr. Bennet says that if Elizabeth marries Mr. Collins, he will never see her again.

Of course, Mr. Bennet knows that Mr. Collins is a fool, and he does not want his witty, vivacious daughter to be married to such a clod.

Mrs. Bennet Again

Even though Mr. Bennet has refused to force Elizabeth to marry Mr. Collins, Mrs. Bennet still wants her to and tries to convince Elizabeth to change her mind and marry him.

Mrs. Bennet keeps on talking and talking and talking to Elizabeth about marrying Mr. Bennet even though she said in the library that she would never talk to Elizabeth again.

On p. 111, Mrs. Bennet says,

I told you in the library, you know, that I should never speak to you again, and you will find me as good as my word. I have no pleasure in talking to undutiful children — not that I have much pleasure indeed in talking to anybody. People who suffer as I do from nervous complaints can have no great

inclination for talking. Nobody can tell what I suffer. But it is always so. Those who do not complain are never pitied.”

Of course, Mrs. Bennet complains and complains and complains.

Jane

Jane, by the way, declines to interfere, although Mrs. Bennet tries to enlist her on her side.

Chapter 21

What is Mr. Wickham's explanation of his absence from the ball at Netherfield? Does it contradict anything he said earlier?

Mr. Wickham says that he himself decided to avoid the ball at Netherfield because he did not want to meet Mr. Darcy. This does contradict directly what he said earlier.

On pp. 113-114, we read:

“I found,” said he, “as the time drew near, that I had better not meet Mr. Darcy — that to be in the same room, the same party with him for so many hours together, might be more than I could bear, and that scenes might arise unpleasant to more than myself.”

She highly approved his forbearance [...]

Earlier, in chapter 16, Mr. Wickham had said that he would not avoid Mr. Darcy, that if Mr. Darcy wished to avoid him, he might leave instead.

On p. 77, we read:

“I do not at all know; but I *heard* nothing of his going away when I was at Netherfield. I hope your plans in favour of the — — shire will not be affected by his being in the neighbourhood.”

“Oh! no — it is not for *me* to be driven away by Mr. Darcy. If *he* wishes to avoid seeing *me*, he must go. We are not on friendly terms, and it always gives me pain to meet him, but I have no reason for avoiding *him* but what I might proclaim to all the world: a sense of very great ill-usage, and most painful regrets at his being what he is.

What news arrives from Netherfield, and how do Jane and Elizabeth react to it? What is Mrs. Bennet's reaction?

The news is that everyone has decided to leave Netherfield and not return at all that winter. This includes Mr. Bingley, whom Jane loves and would like to be married to.

In addition, in the letter that arrives from Miss Bingley, there is the hint that she and her sister — Mrs. Hurst — would like for their brother — Mr. Bingley — to marry Mr. Darcy's younger sister.

Jane's Reaction

Jane, of course, is disappointed. She would like to marry Mr. Bingley even if his sisters object.

Jane is also disappointed in what Miss Bingley writes about Georgiana Darcy. Of course, Jane wants to marry Mr. Bingley, and she wishes that Miss Bingley and Mrs. Hurst wanted her to marry their brother.

Jane does not think that Miss Bingley is capable of deceiving anyone. Here, she is wrong. Miss Bingley does not want her as a friend in London, as we will see later. Jane's company is OK if no one better is around.

Elizabeth's Reaction

Elizabeth thinks that Mr. Bingley will return to Netherfield without his sisters and without Mr. Darcy, and she convinces Jane of that, eventually.

Elizabeth is convinced that Miss Bingley is trying to keep Mr. Bingley away from Jane, as she prefers that her brother marry Miss Darcy.

Elizabeth, of course, is less naive than Jane. Elizabeth is able to see Miss Bingley's faults.

On p. 117, we read:

The idea of his returning no more Elizabeth treated with the utmost contempt. It appeared to her merely the suggestion of Caroline's interested wishes, and she could not for a moment suppose that those wishes, however openly or artfully spoken, could influence a young man so totally independent of everyone.

Mrs. Bennet

Mrs. Bennet felt that her two oldest daughters and Mr. Bingley's sisters were getting along well, and she is sorry to hear that Miss Bingley and Mrs. Hurst are leaving Netherfield, but she is happy that Mr. Bingley — as she thinks — is coming back soon. Jane and Elizabeth have not told Mrs. Bennet everything that appeared in the letter.

Chapter 22

Why does Charlotte Lucas decide to marry Mr. Collins? Are these reasons consistent with her ideas on love and marriage as expressed in Chapter 6?

Charlotte Lucas is plain and 27. She marries Mr. Collins because she wishes an establishment of her own. She knows that she is at risk of dying an old maid, and she does not wish that. Her brothers are relieved that she is getting married. Otherwise, they would have to support her. Her younger sisters hope to be “out” a little sooner.

Note: Being “out” means being able to attend balls and assemblies, which are for grown-ups. Young women wish to attend these events so they can engage in husband-hunting.

Because Charlotte is well educated, has little money, and is of a certain class, her best option in this culture is to get married or remain an old maid. An old maid, of course, is an old unmarried virgin. She could also possibly be a governess or maybe a teacher.

In chapter 6, Charlotte spoke her views about marriage. Her agreeing to be married to Mr. Collins is consistent with what she said in chapter 6. She thinks that the chance of being happy in marriage is strictly a chance. She is marrying Mr. Collins strictly to get an establishment. She knows that Mr. Collins is a fool, and she is going into this marriage with her eyes wide open.

By the way, Charlotte had been very willing to talk to Mr. Collins in hopes that an offer of marriage would be forthcoming.

Charlotte does not want a long engagement, mostly because she dislikes Mr. Collins’ attempts at courting her.

On p. 120, we read:

In as short a time as Mr. Collins's long speeches would allow, everything was settled between them to the satisfaction of both; and as they entered the house, he earnestly entreated her to name the day that was to make him the happiest of men; and though such a solicitation must be waved for the present, the lady felt no inclination to trifle with his happiness. The stupidity with which he was favoured by nature must guard his courtship from any charm that could make a woman wish for its continuance; and Miss Lucas, who accepted him solely from the pure and disinterested desire of an establishment, cared not how soon that establishment were gained.

On p. 107, we read:

Charlotte herself was tolerably composed. She had gained her point, and had time to consider of it. Her reflections were in general satisfactory. Mr. Collins to be sure was neither sensible nor agreeable; his society was irksome, and his attachment to her must be imaginary. But still, he would be her husband. Without thinking highly either of men or of matrimony, marriage had always been her object; it was the only honourable provision for well-educated young women of small fortune, and however uncertain of giving happiness, must be their pleasantest preservative from want. This preservative she had now obtained; and at the age of twenty-seven, without having ever been handsome, she felt all the good luck of it. The least agreeable circumstance in the business was the surprise it must occasion to Elizabeth Bennet, whose friendship she valued beyond that of any other person. Elizabeth would wonder, and probably would blame her; and though her resolution was not to be shaken, her feelings must be hurt by such disapprobation.

On pp. 120-121, we read:

“I see what you are feeling,” replied Charlotte, “you must be surprised, very much surprised, so lately as Mr. Collins was wishing to marry you. But when you have had time to think it all over, I hope you will be satisfied with what I have done. I am not romantic, you know. I never was. I ask only a comfortable home; and considering Mr. Collins’s character, connections, and situation in life, I am convinced that my chance of happiness with him is as fair as most people can boast on entering the marriage state.”

Note: *Pride and Prejudice* has two competing ideas of marriage. One idea is the pragmatic, practical view of marriage held by Charlotte, of whom the narrator says, “Without thinking highly either of men or of matrimony, marriage had always been her object; it was the only honourable provision for well-educated young women of small fortune, and however uncertain of giving happiness, must be their pleasantest preservative from want” (120). Charlotte does not have an income that makes her independent, and so she must either marry or rely on her male relatives to support her. Elizabeth believes in romantic love. She prefers to marry for love rather than for money.

Are Charlotte Lucas and Mr. Collins likely to have a happy marriage?

Not especially.

Charlotte will have the establishment that she has always wanted; however, she does not love Mr. Collins. It is also difficult to believe that Mr. Collins loves Charlotte. Mr. Collins does not know what romantic love is.

However, they will stay married, and they are likely to have children. (In fact, Charlotte is pregnant at the end of the novel.)

How does Mr. Bennet react when Mr. Collins accepts Mrs. Bennet's invitation to return to Longbourn?

Mr. Bennet does not want Mr. Collins to return quickly to Longbourn, and therefore he tries to convince him not to return, urging him to not neglect his patroness, Lady Catherine.

On p. 121, we read:

They were all astonished; and Mr. Bennet, who could by no means wish for so speedy a return, immediately said,

“But is there not danger of Lady Catherine's disapprobation here, my good sir? — You had better neglect your relations, than run the risk of offending your patroness.”

[...]

“You cannot be too much on your guard. Risk anything rather than her displeasure; and if you find it likely to be raised by your coming to us again, which I should think exceedingly probable, stay quietly at home, and be satisfied that we shall take no offence.”

How does Elizabeth react to Charlotte's telling her that she is engaged to Mr. Collins?

Elizabeth doesn't believe Charlotte at first and is somewhat rude — although unintentionally — when Charlotte tells her. Elizabeth exclaims that the engagement is “impossible” (122).

Why impossible? Because Mr. Collins is so detestable that no one should want to marry him.

However, Elizabeth recovers quickly, and she wishes Charlotte happiness, despite being convinced that happiness in being married to Mr. Collins is impossible.

We should note that Mr. Collins has made two offers of marriage within three days. He has been lucky to have one offer of marriage accepted.

Chapter 23

How does the Bennet family respond to Sir William Lucas' announcement of the engagement of his daughter? How does Sir William Lucas respond to these reactions?

Mrs. Bennet

Mrs. Bennet takes the news badly and does not believe it. Indeed, Lydia says that Sir William is mistaken, for Mr. Collins wishes to marry Elizabeth.

Fortunately, Sir William knows etiquette, and he bears this ill treatment well, though he insists that his news of the engagement is true. (Elizabeth confirms the story — Charlotte told her earlier of the engagement.)

Mrs. Bennet is sure that she has been ill treated by everybody.

On pp. 124-125, we read:

Mrs. Bennet was in fact too much overpowered to say a great deal while Sir William remained; but no sooner had he left them than her feelings found a rapid vent. In the first place, she persisted in disbelieving the whole of the matter; secondly, she was very sure that Mr. Collins had been taken in; thirdly, she trusted that they would never be happy together; and fourthly, that the match might be broken off. Two inferences, however, were plainly deduced from the whole — one, that Elizabeth was the real cause of all the mischief; and the other, that she herself had been barbarously used by them all — and on these two points she principally dwelt during the rest of the day. Nothing could console and nothing appease her. Nor did that day wear out her resentment. A week elapsed before she could see

Elizabeth without scolding her, a month passed away before she could speak to Sir William or Lady Lucas without being rude, and many months were gone before she could at all forgive their daughter.

Mr. Bennet

Mr. Bennet, being Mr. Bennet, is happy because of the news of the engagement. Previously, he had thought that Charlotte was sensible, but now, knowing that she has agreed to marry Mr. Bennet, he realizes that she is a fool.

On p. 125, we read:

Mr. Bennet's emotions were much more tranquil on the occasion, and such as he did experience he pronounced to be of a most agreeable sort; for it gratified him, he said, to discover that Charlotte Lucas, whom he had been used to think tolerably sensible, was as foolish as his wife, and more foolish than his daughter!

Elizabeth

Elizabeth behaves well. She confirms the engagement because of what Charlotte had told her, and she congratulates Sir William and gives many wishes that the couple be happy together.

Jane

Jane also behaves well. She also congratulates Sir William and gives many wishes that the couple be happy together.

Lydia and Kitty

For Lydia and Kitty, the news of the engagement is simply more gossip to spread.

Is this a good place to end Volume 1 of this three-volume novel? Will the audience be willing to keep reading?

The audience will keep on reading.

One cliffhanger that the audience will be interested in learning about is this:

- Will Mr. Bingley return to Netherfield?

The audience will also be interested in the answers to these questions:

- Will Jane ever marry Mr. Bingley?
- Will Elizabeth ever marry — Mr. Wickham, perhaps?

VOLUME 2: Chapters 24-42**Chapter 24 (Volume 2, Chapter 1)**

How do Elizabeth, Jane, and Mr. and Mrs. Bennet each react to the news that Mr. Bingley is not expected to return to Netherfield?

Elizabeth

Elizabeth is disappointed for Jane. Elizabeth figures that Mr. Darcy and Mr. Bingley's two sisters have made plans for Mr. Bingley to fall in love with and marry Miss Darcy.

Jane

Jane is philosophical. She feels that actually Mr. Bingley had not loved her as much as she had thought. Jane feels that soon she will forget Mr. Bingley. We will find out that she is wrong.

Mrs. Bennet

Mrs. Bennet keeps hoping that Mr. Bingley will return to Netherfield, and she comforts herself by saying that he must return there this coming summer.

Mrs. Bennet causes Jane a great deal of distress by constantly talking about Mr. Bingley.

Mr. Bennet

Mr. Bennet believes that Jane has been jilted, and he asks Elizabeth when she will be jilted. He believes that Mr. Wickham could admirably jilt Elizabeth.

As always, Mr. Bennet is a humorous character.

Note: The parents are not especially sensitive. Mrs. Bennet is one of the fools of the novel, and she makes Jane feel bad because she talk constantly about Mr. Bingley. Mr. Bennet

is not a fool, but his humor is somewhat cynical. Jane is heartbroken, but Mr. Bennet finds humor in this (partly because Jane is able to put on a composed face in public). Mr. Bennet says to Elizabeth, “[Y]our sister is crossed in love I find. I congratulate her. Next to being married, a girl likes to be crossed in love a little now and then” (135).

At the end of this chapter, everyone in the neighborhood has heard that Mr. Darcy mistreated Mr. Wickham. Elizabeth and Jane have not told anyone, so who must be the source of that information?

The only person who could have told everyone is Mr. Wickham.

Mr. Darcy is not likely to have told everyone.

On pp. 135-136, we read:

Mr. Wickham’s society was of material service in dispelling the gloom, which the late perverse occurrences had thrown on many of the Longbourn family. They saw him often, and to his other recommendations was now added that of general unreserve. The whole of what Elizabeth had already heard, his claims on Mr. Darcy, and all that he had suffered from him, was now openly acknowledged and publicly canvassed; and everybody was pleased to think how much they had always disliked Mr. Darcy before they had known anything of the matter.

Miss Bennet was the only creature who could suppose there might be any extenuating circumstances in the case, unknown to the society of Hertfordshire; her mild and steady candour always pleaded for allowances, and urged the possibility of mistakes — but by everybody else Mr. Darcy was condemned as the worst of men.

Chapter 25 (Volume 2, Chapter 2)

• Write short character analyses of Mr. and Mrs. Gardiner.

Mr. Gardiner

Mr. Gardiner is Mrs. Bennet's brother, and he is vastly superior to her. For one thing, he was born more intelligent than she, and for another, he is better educated. Therefore, by both nature and nurture, he is vastly superior to his sister.

Mr. Gardiner is sensible (intelligent), and he is gentlemanlike. He is well bred, and he is agreeable. He is also in trade — that is, he runs a business.

Mrs. Bennet

A quick note about Mrs. Bennet: She is very fond of society. While her brother and his wife visit her, she makes sure that company is always around. At no time is there a family dinner. Instead, she always makes sure that some soldiers or other people are present.

Mrs. Gardiner

1. Mrs. Gardiner is several years younger than Mrs. Bennet and Mrs. Phillips.
2. Mrs. Gardiner is an amiable, intelligent, elegant woman, and a great favorite with all her Longbourn nieces.
3. Mrs. Gardiner has often allowed Jane and Elizabeth to stay with her in London.
4. Mrs. Gardiner keeps her eyes open. She observes Elizabeth and Mr. Wickham. She doesn't think that they are in love, but she does think they like each other.
5. Mrs. Gardiner is kind.

A. She invites Jane to stay in London with them as she thinks that a scene of scenery will do her good. She also realizes that Jane may not get over Mr. Bingley as quickly as Elizabeth would.

B. When Mrs. Bennet wants to talk about the marriages of her daughters that did not occur, out of consideration for Jane and Elizabeth, Mrs. Gardiner changes the subject.

6. Mrs. Gardiner is interested in fashion. Some of the news that she brings to the Bennet family is of the latest fashions.

7. Mrs. Gardiner is not naive. She is aware that men can fall in and out of love very quickly.

On p. 137, we read:

On the following Monday, Mrs. Bennet had the pleasure of receiving her brother and his wife, who came as usual to spend the Christmas at Longbourn. Mr. Gardiner was a sensible, gentlemanlike man, greatly superior to his sister, as well by nature as education. The Netherfield ladies would have had difficulty in believing that a man who lived by trade, and within view of his own warehouses, could have been so well bred and agreeable. Mrs. Gardiner, who was several years younger than Mrs. Bennet and Mrs. Philips, was an amiable, intelligent, elegant woman, and a great favourite with all her Longbourn nieces. Between the two eldest and herself especially, there subsisted a very particular regard. They had frequently been staying with her in town.

Why don't the Gardiners bring their children with them?

The Gardiners do not bring their children with them when they spend Christmas with the Bennets. The Gardiners arrive

on Monday, December 23, and they leave on Monday, December 30. Three months later, Elizabeth travels through London, and we learn that she has not seen the Gardiners' children for 12 months. Quite simply, Christmas was not as important then as it is now. Charles Dickens, a later novelist who is the author of *A Christmas Carol*, is credited with making Christmas an important family holiday. We can also guess that the Gardiners' visit is relatively short (one week) in an era that did not have the railroad or other modern forms of mass transportation. If they had brought their children, they also would have had to bring along some servants to take care of their children. So the Gardiners choose to keep things simple and not bring their children along on this relatively short visit.

Compare and contrast Mr. and Mrs. Gardiner to Mr. and Mrs. Bennet.

We are meant to contrast the Gardiners with the Bennet parents. Both of the Gardiners are intelligent people, and they are better parents than are Mr. and Mrs. Bennet. Mrs. Gardiner changes the subject when she notices that Jane and Elizabeth are upset by the talk about possible marriages. Mrs. Gardiner also gives Elizabeth good advice about Mr. Wickham. Mr. Bennet's sarcastic sense of humor is not needed or wanted in the present circumstances. Mr. Gardiner shows concern for Jane by inviting her to stay with them in London — this will give her a welcome change of scenery.

What evidence exists that Mr. Bingley was in love or about to fall in love with Jane? In addition, explain this witty sentence by Elizabeth: "Is not general incivility the very essence of love?" (139).

One piece of evidence of Mr. Bingley's possible love for Jane is that Mr. Bingley was so engrossed by Jane that he forgot about other people and failed to observe proper etiquette.

Elizabeth points out that people in love are engrossed by each other — so much that they forget other people and fail to observe proper etiquette.

For instance, at a dance, Mr. Bingley insulted two or three young ladies by not inviting them to dance. In addition, Elizabeth spoke to him twice and he didn't even answer her.

On pp. 138-139, we read:

“[...] Pray, how *violent* was Mr. Bingley's love?”

“I never saw a more promising inclination. He was growing quite inattentive to other people, and wholly engrossed by her. Every time they met, it was more decided and remarkable. At his own ball he offended two or three young ladies by not asking them to dance, and I spoke to him twice myself without receiving an answer. Could there be finer symptoms? Is not general incivility the very essence of love?”

What kind of “love” does Mrs. Gardiner suppose that Mr. Bingley felt for Jane?

Mrs. Gardiner thinks that Mr. Bingley may have felt an inconsequential infatuation for Jane, but that is all. Mr. Bingley, as described, seems to her to be the type of man who can easily fall in love with a woman for a few weeks, but if they are then separated, he easily forgets her.

Elizabeth, of course, thinks that Jane and Mr. Bingley were at least on the verge of being in love and would have made a happily married couple.

On p. 138, we read:

When alone with Elizabeth afterwards, she [Mrs. Gardiner] spoke more on the subject. “It seems likely to have been a desirable match for Jane,” said she. “I am sorry it went off. But these things happen so

often! A young man, such as you describe Mr. Bingley, so easily falls in love with a pretty girl for a few weeks, and when accident separates them, so easily forgets her, that these sort of inconstancies are very frequent.”

How and why does Jane go to London with Mr. and Mrs. Gardiner?

Mrs. Gardiner invites Jane to go to London for a while because she feels that a change of scenery will be good for her and may help her to get over Mr. Bingley.

On p. 139, we read:

[Mrs. Gardiner:] “Oh, yes — of that kind of love which I suppose him to have felt. Poor Jane! I am sorry for her, because, with her disposition, she may not get over it immediately. It had better have happened to *you*, Lizzy; you would have laughed yourself out of it sooner. But do you think she would be prevailed on to go back with us? Change of scene might be of service — and perhaps a little relief from home, may be as useful as anything.”

Is Jane likely to see Mr. Bingley again in London? What does Mrs. Gardiner think? What does Elizabeth think?

It is possible, but it doesn't seem likely.

Mrs. Gardiner

Mrs. Gardiner is aware that she lives in a much different part of London than the part that Mr. Bingley lives in. England is a very class-conscious country, and Mrs. Gardiner thinks that Jane is unlikely to see Mr. Bingley in London. In addition, Mr. and Mrs. Bingley don't go much into society.

Of course, Mrs. Gardiner also thinks that Mr. Bingley was merely infatuated with Jane.

Elizabeth

Elizabeth thinks that Miss Bingley will drop her acquaintance with Jane.

However, Elizabeth does think it is possible for Mr. Bingley to want to see Jane in London.

Of course, Elizabeth also thinks that Mr. Bingley was at least on the verge of falling in love with Jane.

Chapter 26 (Volume 2, Chapter 3)

Why does Mrs. Gardiner warn Elizabeth against falling in love with Mr. Wickham, and how does Elizabeth respond?

The main reason Mrs. Gardiner warns Elizabeth against falling in love with Mr. Wickham is that he has no money. If not for that, Mrs. Gardiner believes that Mr. Wickham would be a good match for Elizabeth.

Mrs. Gardiner and Elizabeth actually have a good discussion without causing a major quarrel — and a major quarrel could easily erupt on such a delicate topic. However, Mrs. Gardiner realizes that Elizabeth is not the type of woman who will fall in love with a man merely because she has been warned not to fall in love with him.

Elizabeth, however, does not promise not to fall in love with Mr. Wickham. Instead, on p. 143 she promises this:

“[...] But really, and upon my honour, I will try to do what I think to be wisest; and now, I hope you are satisfied.”

On p. 142, we read:

[Mrs. Gardiner:] “You are too sensible a girl, Lizzy, to fall in love merely because you are warned against it; and, therefore, I am not afraid of speaking openly. Seriously, I would have you be on your guard. Do not involve yourself, or endeavour to involve him in an affection which the want of fortune would make so very imprudent. I have nothing to say against *him*; he is a most interesting young man; and if he had the fortune he ought to have, I should think you could not do better. But as it is — you must not let your fancy run away with you.”

On p. 143, we read:

Her aunt assured her that she was; and Elizabeth having thanked her for the kindness of her hints, they parted; a wonderful instance of advice being given on such a point without being resented.

Why does Charlotte want Elizabeth to visit her?

Charlotte and Elizabeth have been best friends, so of course Charlotte wants Elizabeth to visit her in Hunsford, where she will be living with her husband, Mr. Collins.

Elizabeth, of course, doesn't like Mr. Collins, but she agrees to visit for Charlotte's sake.

Note: We should be aware that travel was difficult in Jane Austen's day. Travelers didn't even have the choice of going by train, as Jane Austen predates trains by 20 years. That is one reason why visitors tended to stay a long time. Travel was difficult and expensive, and so the traveler would stay for a while once having arrived to where they were going.

Why does Jane end up believing that Miss Bingley no longer wishes to regard her as her friend?

Jane has many reasons:

1. Miss Bingley does not call on her when Jane arrives in London.
2. However, Jane goes to visit Miss Bingley, and Miss Bingley is warm and friendly and claims not to have received Jane's letter saying that she was going to London.
3. Jane waits two weeks for Miss Bingley to return her visit. Miss Bingley takes her own sweet time about returning the visit. The faster the visit is returned, the more friendly the new visitor. If you

don't much care about someone, you don't return their visit very quickly.

4. When Miss Bingley finally returns Jane's visit, she is emotionally cold, and Jane realizes that Miss Bingley does not care any longer to be acquainted with her.

Note: Elizabeth, of course, is not surprised by this news. Elizabeth also thinks that no one has told Mr. Bingley that Jane is in London.

On p. 145, we read:

Elizabeth shook her head over this letter. It convinced her that accident only could discover to Mr. Bingley her sister's being in town.

Mr. Wickham begins to seek the attention of a young woman who has suddenly acquired £10,000. Why is Elizabeth so forgiving of Mr. Wickham?

Elizabeth realizes that Mr. Wickham needs money to live on. She and Mr. Wickham are not a good match mainly because neither has much money.

If Mr. Wickham had more money, Mrs. Gardiner would consider him a good match for Elizabeth.

If Elizabeth had more money, Mr. Wickham would consider her a good match for himself.

By the way, no one supposes that Mr. Wickham loves the newly rich woman for herself alone. Before she became rich, Mr. Wickham had no interest in her.

On pp. 147-148, we read:

Mrs. Gardiner about this time reminded Elizabeth of her promise concerning that gentleman, and required information; and Elizabeth had such to send as might

rather give contentment to her aunt than to herself. His apparent partiality had subsided, his attentions were over, he was the admirer of someone else. Elizabeth was watchful enough to see it all, but she could see it and write of it without material pain. Her heart had been but slightly touched, and her vanity was satisfied with believing that *she* would have been his only choice, had fortune permitted it. The sudden acquisition of ten thousand pounds was the most remarkable charm of the young lady to whom he was now rendering himself agreeable; but Elizabeth, less clear-sighted perhaps in his case than in Charlotte's, did not quarrel with him for his wish of independence. Nothing, on the contrary, could be more natural; and while able to suppose that it cost him a few struggles to relinquish her, she was ready to allow it a wise and desirable measure for both, and could very sincerely wish him happy.

All this was acknowledged to Mrs. Gardiner; and after relating the circumstances, she thus went on: "I am now convinced, my dear aunt, that I have never been much in love; for had I really experienced that pure and elevating passion, I should at present detest his very name, and wish him all manner of evil. But my feelings are not only cordial towards *him*; they are even impartial towards Miss King. I cannot find out that I hate her at all, or that I am in the least unwilling to think her a very good sort of girl. There can be no love in all this. My watchfulness has been effectual; and though I should certainly be a more interesting object to all my acquaintance, were I distractedly in love with him, I cannot say that I regret my comparative insignificance. Importance may sometimes be purchased too dearly. Kitty and Lydia take his defection much more to heart than I

do. They are young in the ways of the world, and not yet open to the mortifying conviction that handsome young men must have something to live on, as well as the plain.”

Chapter 27 (Volume 2, Chapter 4)

What is your opinion of Elizabeth's fellow travelers?

Of course, with Jane visiting in London, and with Elizabeth visiting Charlotte, the only sensible person left in the Bennet house is Mr. Bennet himself. We read on p. 149:

The only pain was in leaving her father, who would certainly miss her, and who, when it came to the point, so little liked her going that he told her to write to him, and almost promised to answer her letter.

Elizabeth's fellow travelers are not as lively or as intelligent as herself.

Elizabeth is unable to find much pleasure in their company. She has known Sir William so long that she is unable to delight in his absurdities (they are too familiar to her), and Sir William's daughter, Maria, is ignorant like he is.

On p. 150, we read:

Her fellow-travellers the next day were not of a kind to make her think him [Mr. Wickham] less agreeable. Sir William Lucas and his daughter Maria, a good-humoured girl, but as empty-headed as himself, had nothing to say that could be worth hearing, and were listened to with about as much delight as the rattle of the chaise. Elizabeth loved absurdities, but she had known Sir William's too long. He could tell her nothing new of the wonders of his presentation and knighthood; and his civilities were worn out like his information.

In some ways, Elizabeth is like her father: Mr. Bennet. Both enjoy the absurdities of other people.

How do Elizabeth's and Mrs. Gardiner's opinions of Mr. Wickham differ? What is the difference between being prudent and being mercenary?

This conversation is interesting. Earlier, Mrs. Gardiner had warned Elizabeth not to fall in love with Mr. Wickham because he had no money. Now she criticizes Mr. Wickham because he is pursuing a young woman who has only recently come into money.

We do run into mercenary motives here. Elizabeth must not fall in love with a man with no money. Does that make her mercenary if she pursues a man with money?

Elizabeth defends Mr. Wickham. She knows he needs money.

Mrs. Gardiner does not defend Mr. Wickham. She wonders if he is mercenary.

This does seem to smack of a double standard. Elizabeth must take care to fall in love with a person who has money, but Mr. Wickham should pursue whomever he loves, even if she has no money — unless it's Elizabeth, of course.

It is prudent to fall in love with person with money. Some people joke that it's just as easy to fall in love with a rich person as with a poor one. But this is cynical.

It is mercenary to marry only for money. Charlotte is mercenary.

On pp. 151-152, we read:

Mrs. Gardiner then rallied her niece on Wickham's desertion, and complimented her on bearing it so well.

“But, my dear Elizabeth,” she added, “what sort of girl is Miss King? I should be sorry to think our friend mercenary.”

“Pray, my dear aunt, what is the difference in matrimonial affairs, between the mercenary and the prudent motive? Where does discretion end, and avarice begin? Last Christmas you were afraid of his marrying me, because it would be imprudent; and now, because he is trying to get a girl with only ten thousand pounds, you want to find out that he is mercenary.”

“If you will only tell me what sort of girl Miss King is, I shall know what to think.”

“She is a very good kind of girl, I believe. I know no harm of her.”

“But he paid her not the smallest attention, till her grandfather’s death made her mistress of this fortune.”

“No — why should he? If it was not allowable for him to gain *my* affections, because I had no money, what occasion could there be for making love to a girl whom he did not care about, and who was equally poor?”

“But there seems indelicacy in directing his attentions towards her, so soon after this event.”

“A man in distressed circumstances has not time for all those elegant decorums which other people may observe. If *she* does not object to it, why should *we*?”

“*Her* not objecting, does not justify *him*. It only shows her being deficient in something herself — sense or feeling.”

“Well,” cried Elizabeth, “have it as you choose. *He* shall be mercenary, and *she* shall be foolish.”

“No, Lizzy, that is what I do *not* choose. I should be sorry, you know, to think ill of a young man who has lived so long in Derbyshire.”

“Oh! If that is all, I have a very poor opinion of young men who live in Derbyshire; and their intimate friends who live in Hertfordshire are not much better. I am sick of them all. Thank Heaven! I am going tomorrow where I shall find a man who has not one agreeable quality, who has neither manner nor sense to recommend him. Stupid men are the only ones worth knowing, after all.”

“Take care, Lizzy; that speech savours strongly of disappointment.”

What invitation does Elizabeth happily accept in this chapter?

She accepts an invitation extended by the Gardiners to go with them on a visit up north, perhaps even to the Lakes.

This invitation is important, as we will see, because the trip will take her to Mr. Darcy’s estate: Pemberley.

On p. 152, we read:

Before they were separated by the conclusion of the play, she [Elizabeth] had the unexpected happiness of an invitation to accompany her uncle and aunt in a tour of pleasure which they proposed taking in the summer.

“We have not quite determined how far it shall carry us,” said Mrs. Gardiner, “but perhaps to the Lakes.”

No scheme could have been more agreeable to Elizabeth, and her acceptance of the invitation was most ready and grateful. "My dear, dear aunt," she rapturously cried, "what delight! What felicity! You give me fresh life and vigour. Adieu to disappointment and spleen. What are men to rocks and mountains? Oh! What hours of transport we shall spend! And when we *do* return, it shall not be like other travellers, without being able to give one accurate idea of anything. We *will* know where we have gone — we *will* recollect what we have seen. Lakes, mountains, and rivers shall not be jumbled together in our imaginations; nor, when we attempt to describe any particular scene, will we begin quarrelling about its relative situation. Let *our* first effusions be less insupportable than those of the generality of travellers."

Chapter 28 (Volume 2, Chapter 5)

Charlotte is married to a fool. How does she cope?

1. Mr. Collins frequently says something foolish. When that happens, his wife, Charlotte, wisely does not hear what he has to say.

2. Charlotte encourages Mr. Collins to work in the garden. Reading between the lines, we can guess that she encourages him to work in the garden to get him out of her way.

On p. 154, we read:

[...] When Mr. Collins said anything of which his wife might reasonably be ashamed, which certainly was not unseldom, she [Elizabeth] involuntarily turned her eye on Charlotte. Once or twice she could discern a faint blush; but in general Charlotte wisely did not hear. After sitting long enough to admire every article of furniture in the room, from the sideboard to the fender, to give an account of their journey, and of all that had happened in London, Mr. Collins invited them to take a stroll in the garden, which was large and well laid out, and to the cultivation of which he attended himself. To work in his garden was one of his most respectable pleasures; and Elizabeth admired the command of countenance with which Charlotte talked of the healthfulness of the exercise, and owned she encouraged it as much as possible.

3. Later, in Chapter 30 (Volume 2, Chapter 7), we learn that Charlotte uses an uncomfortable room as her sitting room. Basically, she does this as a way to keep her husband away from her. The room that Charlotte and Elizabeth sit in is not as comfortable as the dining-parlour, but if Charlotte sat in a room that was comfortable, her husband, Mr. Collins, would spend more time with her. She chooses to sit in a less

comfortable room so that he is not tempted to spend lots of time with her.

How does Mr. Collins treat Elizabeth? Has he changed since his wedding?

He treats her fairly well. Basically, he wants her to see what she lost in not accepting his proposal of marriage, and he wants her to regret not accepting his proposal of marriage.

Mr. Collins has not changed since his wedding.

Mr. Collins is pompous and overly formal.

Mr. Collins is still very proud of his material possessions.

Mr. Collins is still very proud of his patroness and of Rosings.

Mr. Collins is still a fool.

On pp. 153-154, we read:

[...] She [Elizabeth] saw instantly that her cousin's manners were not altered by his marriage; his formal civility was just what it had been, and he detained her some minutes at the gate to hear and satisfy his enquiries after all her family. They were then, with no other delay than his pointing out the neatness of the entrance, taken into the house; and as soon as they were in the parlour, he welcomed them a second time with ostentatious formality to his humble abode, and punctually repeated all his wife's offers of refreshment.

Elizabeth was prepared to see him in his glory; and she could not help fancying that in displaying the good proportion of the room, its aspect and its furniture, he addressed himself particularly to her, as if wishing to make her feel what she had lost in

refusing him. But though everything seemed neat and comfortable, she was not able to gratify him by any sigh of repentance; and rather looked with wonder at her friend that she could have so cheerful an air, with such a companion.

Write a brief character analysis of Miss Anne de Bourgh.

1. She is abominably rude.

She keeps Charlotte out of doors in a lot of wind instead of coming into the Collinses' house.

We find out that she seldom enters the Collinses' house, which is a sign of pride — she is usually too good to go into their house.

2. She is small and thin.

We have previously read that she is frequently ill.

3. She looks sickly and cross.

This is what Elizabeth thinks. Elizabeth thinks that Miss de Bourgh will be “a very proper wife” (156) for Mr. Darcy. Of course, she means a bad wife, one who will not make him happy.

On p. 156, we read:

“La! My dear,” said Maria quite shocked at the mistake, “it is not Lady Catherine. The old lady is Mrs. Jenkinson, who lives with them. The other is Miss De Bourgh. Only look at her. She is quite a little creature. Who would have thought she could be so thin and small!”

“She is abominably rude to keep Charlotte out of doors in all this wind. Why does she not come in?”

“Oh! Charlotte says, she hardly ever does. It is the greatest of favours when Miss De Bourgh comes in.”

“I like her appearance,” said Elizabeth, struck with other ideas. “She looks sickly and cross. Yes, she will do for him very well. She will make him a very proper wife.”

Mr. Collins and Charlotte were both standing at the gate in conversation with the ladies; and Sir William, to Elizabeth’s high diversion, was stationed in the doorway, in earnest contemplation of the greatness before him, and constantly bowing whenever Miss De Bourgh looked that way.

At length there was nothing more to be said; the ladies drove on, and the others returned into the house. Mr. Collins no sooner saw the two girls than he began to congratulate them on their good fortune, which Charlotte explained by letting them know that the whole party was asked to dine at Rosings the next day.

Chapter 29 (Volume 2, Chapter 6)

Write a brief character analysis of Lady Catherine de Bourgh.

1. Lady Catherine is a know-it-all.

She delivers her opinion very forcefully on many subjects.

2. Lady Catherine is opinionated, and she is unused to having her opinion contradicted.

She asks Elizabeth many questions, and she comments that the younger sisters ought not to be out before the older sisters are married (Elizabeth argues against this, as well she might, since Charlotte was her friend and neighbor and was 27 years old before she married).

3. Lady Catherine is impertinent.

She asks Charlotte about intimate details of the Collinses' household.

Lady Catherine even asks Elizabeth how old she is.

4. Lady Catherine is rich, and she is proud.

Has Lady Catherine ever done anything good?

Yes, she has. She really has treated Mr. Collins well. Not only has she gotten him his living, but she has helped him improve his parsonage.

In *The Annotated Pride and Prejudice*, edited by David M. Shapard, we read (329):

Parsonages in this period tended to be in bad shape, with some parishes not even having one. Many of the clergymen living in them lacked the money to repair or improve them, and their incentive to do so was limited by the knowledge that after they died or

retired the improved parsonage would go not to their heir but to the next person filling the post. Responsibility for repair and improvement rested mainly on the landowner or other party disposing of the living, but they often did not bother since it meant spending money without receiving anything themselves. Lady Catherine, however, is not guilty of such negligence.

How do these people react to greatness of wealth and rank: Mr. Collins, Mrs. Collins, Sir William Lucas, his daughter Maria, and Elizabeth? What does Elizabeth value more than wealth and rank?

Mr. Collins

Of course, Mr. Collins praises everything in sight. At dinner, the only thing he does is to eat the food and praise the food and praise everything in sight.

Mrs. Collins

At dinner, Charlotte is very attentive to everything that Lady Catherine says. Basically, Charlotte is sucking up to her husband's patroness.

Sir William Lucas

Sir William Lucas is overcome at first to be in the presence of such a high personage. Later, he recovers enough to echo his son-in-law's praises. At dinner, all he and Mr. Collins do is eat the food and praise the food.

After dinner, Sir William is silent because he is "storing his memory with anecdotes and noble names" (163).

Maria

Like her father, Maria is overcome to be in the presence of such a high personage.

On pp. 158-159, we read:

In spite of having been at St. James's, Sir William was so completely awed by the grandeur surrounding him, that he had but just courage enough to make a very low bow, and take his seat without saying a word; and his daughter, frightened almost out of her senses, sat on the edge of her chair, not knowing which way to look. Elizabeth found herself quite equal to the scene, and could observe the three ladies before her composedly. Lady Catherine was a tall, large woman, with strongly marked features, which might once have been handsome. Her air was not conciliating, nor was her manner of receiving them such as to make her visitors forget their inferior rank. She was not rendered formidable by silence; but whatever she said was spoken in so authoritative a tone as marked her self-importance, and brought Mr. Wickham immediately to Elizabeth's mind; and from the observation of the day altogether, she believed Lady Catherine to be exactly what he had represented.

Elizabeth

Elizabeth is not intimidated by Lady Catherine or her daughter. She feels the impertinence of Lady Catherine's questions, but she is polite and answers them, although she balks a little at telling her age — this, I think, is more of a joke than anything. She does eventually say that she is not yet one and twenty.

Elizabeth values extraordinary talents and miraculous virtue higher than “mere stateliness of money and rank” (139).

Elizabeth remembers what Mr. Wickham had said about Lady Catherine in Volume 1, Chapter 16. What Mr.

Wickham said about Lady Catherine seems very accurate. On pp. 81-82, we read:

“Lady Catherine de Bourgh,” she replied, “has very lately given him a living. I hardly know how Mr. Collins was first introduced to her notice, but he certainly has not known her long.”

“You know of course that Lady Catherine de Bourgh and Lady Anne Darcy were sisters; consequently that she is aunt to the present Mr. Darcy.”

“No, indeed, I did not. I knew nothing at all of Lady Catherine’s connections. I never heard of her existence till the day before yesterday.”

“Her daughter, Miss de Bourgh, will have a very large fortune, and it is believed that she and her cousin will unite the two estates.”

This information made Elizabeth smile, as she thought of poor Miss Bingley. Vain indeed must be all her attentions, vain and useless her affection for his sister and her praise of himself, if he were already self-destined to another.

“Mr. Collins,” said she, “speaks highly both of Lady Catherine and her daughter; but from some particulars that he has related of her ladyship, I suspect his gratitude misleads him, and that in spite of her being his patroness, she is an arrogant, conceited woman.”

“I believe her to be both in a great degree,” replied Wickham; “I have not seen her for many years, but I very well remember that I never liked her, and that her manners were dictatorial and insolent. She has the reputation of being remarkably sensible and clever; but I rather believe she derives part of her

abilities from her rank and fortune, part from her authoritative manner, and the rest from the pride of her nephew, who chooses that everyone connected with him should have an understanding of the first class.”

On p. 139, we read:

When they ascended the steps to the hall, Maria’s alarm was every moment increasing, and even Sir William did not look perfectly calm. Elizabeth’s courage did not fail her. She had heard nothing of Lady Catherine that spoke her awful from any extraordinary talents or miraculous virtue, and the mere stateliness of money and rank she thought she could witness without trepidation.

Is Lady Catherine’s dinner party a success? What does the conversation consist of?

Is Lady Catherine’s party a success?

It’s more accurate to say that it is a bore.

The conversation is either nonexistent or silly.

Elizabeth does not have a good time, although Mr. Collins is well pleased, and I suppose that Sir William is, too.

What does the conversation consist of?

1. Mr. Collins and Sir William praising everything in sight.
2. Lady Catherine giving her opinion forcefully on many subjects.
3. Mrs. Jenkinson fussing about Anne de Bourgh. Mrs. Jenkinson wants Anne de Bourgh to eat more. She also worries about the best way to place a screen — the screen would shield Anne de Bourgh from the light and/or heat of

the fire. Often, shields were small, so they needed to be placed just right.

No wonder Anne de Bourgh is cross and ill — she is spoiled.

4. Lady Catherine asking impertinent questions.

What do we learn about Miss de Bourgh in this chapter?

1. Miss de Bourgh is pale and sickly.
2. Miss de Bourgh does not feel like she has to say anything to Elizabeth at dinner, although she is sitting next to her.
3. Miss de Bourgh is constantly attended by Mrs. Jenkinson, whose job seems to be to spoil her.

On p. 159, we read:

When, after examining the mother, in whose countenance and deportment she soon found some resemblance of Mr. Darcy, she turned her eyes on the daughter, she could almost have joined in Maria's astonishment at her being so thin, and so small. There was neither in figure nor face any likeness between the ladies. Miss De Bourgh was pale and sickly; her features, though not plain, were insignificant; and she spoke very little, except in a low voice to Mrs. Jenkinson, in whose appearance there was nothing remarkable, and who was entirely engaged in listening to what she said, and placing a screen in the proper direction before her eyes.

On p. 160, we read:

[...] The party did not supply much conversation. Elizabeth was ready to speak whenever there was an opening, but she was seated between Charlotte and Miss De Bourgh — the former of whom was engaged in listening to Lady Catherine, and the latter said not

a word to her all dinnertime. Mrs. Jenkinson was chiefly employed in watching how little Miss De Bourgh ate, pressing her to try some other dish, and fearing she were indisposed. Maria thought speaking out of the question, and the gentlemen did nothing but eat and admire.

On p. 162-163, we read:

When the gentlemen had joined them, and tea was over, the card tables were placed. Lady Catherine, Sir William, and Mr. and Mrs. Collins sat down to quadrille; and as Miss De Bourgh chose to play at cassino, the two girls had the honour of assisting Mrs. Jenkinson to make up her party. Their table was superlatively stupid. Scarcely a syllable was uttered that did not relate to the game, except when Mrs. Jenkinson expressed her fears of Miss De Bourgh's being too hot or too cold, or having too much or too little light. A great deal more passed at the other table, Lady Catherine was generally speaking — stating the mistakes of the three others, or relating some anecdote of herself. Mr. Collins was employed in agreeing to everything her Ladyship said, thanking her for every fish he won, and apologising if he thought he won too many. Sir William did not say much. He was storing his memory with anecdotes and noble names.

Chapter 30 (Volume 2, Chapter 7)

Why doesn't Charlotte use the dining-parlour as a sitting-room?

Basically, she does this as a way to keep her husband away from her. The room that Charlotte and Elizabeth sit in is not as comfortable as the dining-parlour, but if Charlotte sat in a room that was comfortable, her husband, Mr. Collins, would spend more time with her. She chooses to sit in a less comfortable room so that he is not tempted to spend lots of time with her.

On p. 164, we read:

Sir William stayed only a week at Hunsford; but his visit was long enough to convince him of his daughter's being most comfortably settled, and of her possessing such a husband and such a neighbour as were not often met with. While Sir William was with them, Mr. Collins devoted his mornings to driving him out in his gig and showing him the country; but when he went away, the whole family returned to their usual employments, and Elizabeth was thankful to find that they did not see more of her cousin by the alteration, for the chief of the time between breakfast and dinner was now passed by him either at work in the garden, or in reading and writing, and looking out of window in his own book room, which fronted the road. The room in which the ladies sat was backwards. Elizabeth at first had rather wondered that Charlotte should not prefer the dining parlour for common use; it was a better-sized room, and had a pleasanter aspect; but she soon saw that her friend had an excellent reason for what she did, for Mr. Collins would undoubtedly have been much less in his own apartment, had they sat in one equally

lively; and she gave Charlotte credit for the arrangement.

Why do Mr. and Mrs. Collins spend so much time at Rosings?

Basically, they are sucking up to Lady Catherine. She may have other livings to dispose of, and if Mr. and Mrs. Collins can get those livings, they will be richer.

On p. 165, we read:

Very few days passed in which Mr. Collins did not walk to Rosings, and not many in which his wife did not think it necessary to go likewise; and till Elizabeth recollected that there might be other family livings to be disposed of, she could not understand the sacrifice of so many hours.

What do we learn about Lady Catherine de Bourgh in this chapter?

1. Lady Catherine is still overly familiar and impertinent.

She sometimes takes refreshment with the Collinses, but only, it seems, so that she can say Charlotte has cuts of meat that are too big for her family.

2. Lady Catherine is a busybody.

She often visits the cottagers so that she can set their affairs “right.”

On p. 165, we read:

[...] Now and then, they were honoured with a call from her ladyship, and nothing escaped her observation that was passing in the room during these visits. She examined into their employments, looked at their work, and advised them to do it differently; found fault with the arrangement of the furniture, or

detected the housemaid in negligence; and if she accepted any refreshment, seemed to do it only for the sake of finding out that Mrs. Collins's joints of meat were too large for her family.

On pp. 165, we read:

Elizabeth soon perceived that though this great lady was not in the commission of the peace for the county, she was a most active magistrate in her own parish, the minutest concerns of which were carried to her by Mr. Collins; and whenever any of the cottagers were disposed to be quarrelsome, discontented or too poor, she sallied forth into the village to settle their differences, silence their complaints, and scold them into harmony and plenty.

Write a brief character analysis of Colonel Fitzwilliam.

Colonel Fitzwilliam and Mr. Darcy visit Lady Catherine. Lady Catherine is Mr. Darcy's aunt, and Colonel Fitzwilliam is one of Mr. Darcy's cousins.

1. Colonel Fitzwilliam is a younger brother. Normally, this means that he would not have much money, as his older brother would inherit it. In fact, this seems to be the case.
2. Colonel Fitzwilliam is not handsome.
3. Colonel Fitzwilliam is about 30, and he looks and acts like a gentleman.
4. Colonel Fitzwilliam speaks well and pleasantly; he is a well-bred man.

On p. 166, we read:

There were two nephews of Lady Catherine to require them, for Mr. Darcy had brought with him a Colonel Fitzwilliam, the younger son of his uncle,

Lord — — ; and to the great surprise of all the party, when Mr. Collins returned, the gentlemen accompanied him. Charlotte had seen them, from her husband's room, crossing the road, and immediately running into the other, told the girls what an honour they might expect, adding,

“I may thank you, Eliza, for this piece of civility. Mr. Darcy would never have come so soon to wait upon me.”

On p. 166, we read:

[...] Colonel Fitzwilliam, who led the way, was about thirty, not handsome, but in person and address most truly the gentleman.

On pp. 166-167, we read:

Colonel Fitzwilliam entered into conversation directly with the readiness and ease of a well-bred man, and talked very pleasantly; but his cousin, after having addressed a slight observation on the house and garden to Mrs. Collins, sat for some time without speaking to anybody.

Note: Darcy's first name is Fitzwilliam. It was also his mother's surname. At this time, a son would often be given his mother's surname as his first name.

Chapter 31 (Volume 2, Chapter 8)

What do we learn about Colonel Fitzwilliam in this chapter?

1. Colonel Fitzwilliam's manners are much admired by Mr. and Mrs. Collins and the visitors to the parsonage.
2. Colonel Fitzwilliam is not proud. He frequently calls at the parsonage.
3. Colonel Fitzwilliam can entertain through his conversation. He talks readily to Elizabeth, and she is entertained by him better than by anybody else at this time.

On p. 168, we read:

Colonel Fitzwilliam's manners were very much admired at the parsonage, and the ladies all felt that he must add considerably to the pleasure of their engagements at Rosings. It was some days, however, before they received any invitation thither, for while there were visitors in the house they could not be necessary; and it was not till Easter-day, almost a week after the gentlemen's arrival, that they were honoured by such an attention, and then they were merely asked on leaving church to come there in the evening. For the last week they had seen very little of either Lady Catherine or her daughter. Colonel Fitzwilliam had called at the parsonage more than once during the time, but Mr. Darcy they had only seen at church.

On p. 168-169, we read:

Colonel Fitzwilliam seemed really glad to see them; anything was a welcome relief to him at Rosings; and Mrs. Collins's pretty friend had moreover caught his fancy very much. He now seated himself by her, and

talked so agreeably of Kent and Hertfordshire, of travelling and staying at home, of new books and music, that Elizabeth had never been half so well entertained in that room before; and they conversed with so much spirit and flow, as to draw the attention of Lady Catherine herself as well as of Mr. Darcy. *His* eyes had been soon and repeatedly turned towards them with a look of curiosity; and that her ladyship after a while shared the feeling, was more openly acknowledged, for she did not scruple to call out,

“What is that you are saying, Fitzwilliam? What is it you are talking of? What are you telling Miss Bennet? Let me hear what it is.”

What does Lady Catherine know about music? What does she think she knows about music? Why haven't Lady Catherine and her daughter learned to play musical instruments well?

Lady Catherine believes that she likes and knows about music, but that is not borne out by her actions.

She believes that she could have been a great proficient at the piano, but she is not. Constantly, she advises Elizabeth to practice to become better; however, Lady Catherine never learned to play.

Lady Catherine believes that her daughter could have been a great proficient at the piano, but unfortunately her illness prevented that.

Lady Catherine requests Elizabeth to play on the piano, but she listens for only half a song before she begins to speak.

Lady Catherine continues to be ill mannered. She has invited Mrs. Collins to practice on the pianoforte (that is, piano) in Mrs. Jenkinson's room, which is nice, but then she adds

(169), “She would be in nobody’s way, you know, in that part of the house.”

This comment makes even Mr. Darcy look ashamed.

Chapter 32 (Volume 2, Chapter 9)

Why does Charlotte suppose that Mr. Darcy may be in love with Elizabeth?

Mr. Darcy comes to visit, alone, and he is surprised to see Elizabeth alone in the cottage. He excuses himself by saying that he thought “all the ladies” (173) were within.

Charlotte suspects that Mr. Darcy may be in love with Elizabeth; therefore, she watches him closely when he comes to visit.

By the way, when Charlotte mentions her suspicions to Elizabeth, Elizabeth just laughs them off.

On p. 175, we read:

“What can be the meaning of this!” said Charlotte, as soon as he was gone. “My dear Eliza, he must be in love with you, or he would never have called on us in this familiar way.”

However, what Charlotte discovers is uncertain. Mr. Darcy does look often at Elizabeth, but he does not look at her with an expression of love; rather, he looks at her with an earnest gaze. Charlotte therefore soon thinks that perhaps Colonel Fitzwilliam would be a good match for Elizabeth.

In your opinion, why does Mr. Darcy visit the Collinsees and their guests so often?

Of course, Charlotte thought that perhaps Mr. Darcy was in love with Elizabeth, but an alternate explanation arises.

There simply isn't much to do at this time of year.

All field sports are over.

Mr. Darcy could stay indoors at Rosings all the time, but he is unlikely to want to be indoors all the time with Lady Catherine.

Perhaps Mr. Darcy likes the walk to the parsonage, or perhaps he likes the nearness of the parsonage, or perhaps he likes the people there. (Of course, that last item may mean that he goes to the parsonage because he likes Elizabeth.)

On pp. 175-176, we read:

But when Elizabeth told of his silence, it did not seem very likely, even to Charlotte's wishes, to be the case; and after various conjectures, they could at last only suppose his visit to proceed from the difficulty of finding anything to do, which was the more probable from the time of year. All field sports were over. Within doors there was Lady Catherine, books, and a billiard table, but gentlemen cannot be always within doors; and in the nearness of the Parsonage, or the pleasantness of the walk to it, or of the people who lived in it, the two cousins found a temptation from this period of walking thither almost every day.

Of course, anyone who has read the novel realizes that Mr. Darcy is in love with or is falling in love with Elizabeth although she has no idea of it.

We do have a few hints that Mr. Darcy is falling in love with Elizabeth:

1. Elizabeth tells him where her favorite walk is, and Mr. Darcy sometimes sees her on that walk. He is going out of his way to meet her there.
2. Mr. Darcy talks about the distance between Hertfordshire, where Elizabeth lives, and Hunsford, in Kent, where the Collinses live. He does not regard

it as a very great distance, although he thinks that Elizabeth may. Mr. Darcy may be thinking ahead to marrying Elizabeth. If he does marry her, she would have to travel to his home, and perhaps he is worried that she will consider that a great distance.

Would Colonel Fitzwilliam be a good husband for Elizabeth?

Very Possibly, Yes

1. Colonel Fitzwilliam enjoys Elizabeth's company, and she enjoys his company. They can talk to each other.
2. Both of them seem to be sensible.
3. Both of them know and observe proper etiquette.
4. Colonel Fitzwilliam is not handsome. Elizabeth is handsome, although she is not such a great beauty as Jane.

Two Disadvantages

1. One thing against the marriage is finances. Colonel Fitzwilliam is a younger son, and so he doesn't have much money. Neither, of course, does Elizabeth.
2. And of course they should be in love if they are to be married. They have only a liking between them, not a great love for each other.

Charlotte's Opinion

Charlotte certainly thinks Colonel Fitzwilliam would be a good match for Elizabeth.

On p. 177, we read:

In her kind schemes for Elizabeth, she [Charlotte] sometimes planned her marrying Colonel Fitzwilliam. He was beyond comparison the

pleasantest man; he certainly admired her, and his situation in life was most eligible; but, to counterbalance these advantages, Mr. Darcy had considerable patronage in the church, and his cousin could have none at all.

Chapter 33 (Volume 2, Chapter 10)

Why would a younger son of a great man be concerned about money in this society?

Colonel Fitzwilliam is the younger son of an Earl. As such, he has never really suffered hardship, but he does feel the lack of money occasionally. For instance, he stays at Rosings because Mr. Darcy is there. Mr. Darcy, being rich, calls the shots. He has already delayed their departure from Rosings, and he could even delay it once again. (However, Colonel Fitzwilliam is also a guardian of Mr. Darcy's sister. Colonel Fitzwilliam and Mr. Darcy are relatives. They are first cousins. Colonel Fitzwilliam is the son of Mr. Darcy's mother's brother, as we find out in a letter that Mr. Darcy later writes to Elizabeth.)

Colonel Fitzwilliam does say that a younger son can have expensive habits — habits that it takes money to satisfy.

Colonel Fitzwilliam also says that a younger son cannot marry where he likes. By that, he means that a younger son must marry a woman with money.

Elizabeth wonders if this last remark is meant for her, that he is saying that he can't marry her because she doesn't have enough money. She reddens at the idea, but jokes that Colonel Fitzwilliam should marry a woman with at least 50,000 pounds, unless his older brother is very ill. This is a good use of humor to avoid an awkward situation.

On pp. 179-180, we read:

“He likes to have his own way very well,” replied Colonel Fitzwilliam. “But so we all do. It is only that he has better means of having it than many others, because he is rich, and many others are poor. I speak feelingly. A younger son, you know, must be inured to self-denial and dependence.”

“In my opinion, the younger son of an Earl can know very little of either. Now, seriously, what have you ever known of self-denial and dependence? When have you been prevented by want of money from going wherever you chose, or procuring anything you had a fancy for?”

“These are home questions — and perhaps I cannot say that I have experienced many hardships of that nature. But in matters of greater weight, I may suffer from the want of money. Younger sons cannot marry where they like.”

“Unless where they like women of fortune, which I think they very often do.”

“Our habits of expence make us too dependant, and there are not many in my rank of life who can afford to marry without some attention to money.”

“Is this,” thought Elizabeth, “meant for me?” and she coloured at the idea; but, recovering herself, said in a lively tone, “And pray, what is the usual price of an Earl’s younger son? Unless the elder brother is very sickly, I suppose you would not ask above fifty thousand pounds.”

He answered her in the same style, and the subject dropped.

In Jane Austen’s society, women had to hope for a good marriage: a marriage with someone who has some money and is pleasant to be with. Some women, such as Charlotte, were unable to be choosy, as being choosy meant being an old maid. This chapter also shows that men sometimes felt obligated to marry for money. Colonel Fitzwilliam is honest when he says that a younger son may certainly desire money.

While talking to Colonel Fitzwilliam, Elizabeth says something about Miss Darcy that causes him to look at her earnestly. Why does he do that?

On p. 180, we read:

“No,” said Colonel Fitzwilliam, “that is an advantage which he must divide with me. I am joined with him in the guardianship of Miss Darcy.”

“Are you, indeed? And pray what sort of guardians do you make? Does your charge give you much trouble? Young ladies of her age are sometimes a little difficult to manage, and if she has the true Darcy spirit, she may like to have her own way.”

As she spoke, she observed him looking at her earnestly, and the manner in which he immediately asked her why she supposed Miss Darcy likely to give them any uneasiness, convinced her that she had somehow or other got pretty near the truth. She directly replied,

“You need not be frightened. I never heard any harm of her; and I dare say she is one of the most tractable creatures in the world. She is a very great favourite with some ladies of my acquaintance, Mrs. Hurst and Miss Bingley. I think I have heard you say that you know them.”

Elizabeth is convinced “that she had somehow or other got pretty near the truth” (180); in other words, apparently, Miss Darcy at one time has been “a little difficult to manage” (180). As we will see in a letter that Mr. Darcy writes to Elizabeth, this is true. Here we have foreshadowing.

In this chapter, what new information does Elizabeth learn about Mr. Darcy?

1. Mr. Darcy often meets her during her walks. He does this even though she took the precaution of telling him that she particularly enjoyed walking in this particular place. In other words, Mr. Darcy may be seeking her out. (When Mr. Darcy does meet her, he walks with her, and they even speak a little — but he never speaks much.)

2. Mr. Darcy has delayed leaving Rosings. This again may be evidence that he is attracted to Elizabeth.

3. This last item is the most important. Colonel Fitzwilliam tells her that Mr. Darcy saved a friend — probably Mr. Bingley — from an imprudent marriage. This of course makes Elizabeth angry. She thinks that pride caused Mr. Darcy to interfere with Jane's probable marriage to Mr. Bingley. She thinks that Mr. Darcy objected to Jane's having an uncle who was an attorney and a second uncle who was in trade. Elizabeth does briefly think about her mother, but dismisses her as a reason why Mr. Darcy should oppose Mr. Bingley's marrying Jane.

At this time, of course, Elizabeth is blinded by prejudice into thinking that Mr. Darcy's pride has ruined Jane's chances for happiness.

Chapter 34 (Volume 2, Chapter 11)

What is your opinion of Mr. Darcy's marriage proposal? Is it expressed in such a way that the woman he wishes to marry is likely to accept his proposal?

1. Mr. Darcy starts well. On p. 185, he says:

“In vain have I struggled. It will not do. My feelings will not be repressed. You must allow me to tell you how ardently I admire and love you.”

2. The middle is not so well done.

Among other things, Mr. Darcy tells Elizabeth — in Elizabeth's words] that he “liked [her] against [his] will, against [his] reason, and even against [his] character” (186). Basically, Mr. Darcy tells Elizabeth that he thinks that he is marrying beneath himself.

On p. 185, we read:

He spoke well, but there were feelings besides those of the heart to be detailed, and he was not more eloquent on the subject of tenderness than of pride. His sense of her inferiority — of its being a degradation — of the family obstacles which judgment had always opposed to inclination, were dwelt on with a warmth which seemed due to the consequence he was wounding, but was very unlikely to recommend his suit.

On p. 186, Elizabeth says:

“I might as well enquire,” replied she, “why, with so evident a design of offending and insulting me, you chose to tell me that you liked me against your will, against your reason, and even against your character? Was not this some excuse for incivility, if I *was*

uncivil? But I have other provocations. You know I have. [...]”

3. The conclusion is very poorly done. Mr. Darcy’s face shows that he is certain that Elizabeth will accept his marriage proposal, although his words say otherwise.

On p. 185, we read:

[...] He concluded with representing to her the strength of that attachment which, in spite of all his endeavours, he had found impossible to conquer; and with expressing his hope that it would now be rewarded by her acceptance of his hand. As he said this, she could easily see that he had no doubt of a favourable answer. He *spoke* of apprehension and anxiety, but his countenance expressed real security. Such a circumstance could only exasperate farther, and when he ceased, the colour rose into her cheeks, and she said,

Why would Mr. Darcy think himself a good catch for an unmarried woman?

1. He is rich.
2. He is high born.
3. He thinks well of himself — he is proud.

Why does Elizabeth think that Mr. Darcy is not a good catch?

1. Mr. Darcy made a very poor marriage proposal.
2. Elizabeth also has pride.
3. Elizabeth needs to marry a man whom she can respect, not a man whom she dislikes.

4. Elizabeth is aware that Mr. Darcy interfered in the relationship between Mr. Bingley and Jane, thus stopping a marriage that would have made both partners happy.

5. Elizabeth has heard bad reports of Mr. Darcy from Mr. Wickham.

6. Elizabeth early formed a dislike of Mr. Darcy because of Mr. Darcy's actions.

How does Mr. Darcy react to Elizabeth's rejection of his proposal?

1. Resentment.

2. Surprise.

3. Anger.

4. He forces himself to remain calm.

5. He asks Elizabeth for her reasons in rejecting him.

6. He defends himself. He says that he was honest in talking about Elizabeth's inferior connections.

On p. 188, we read:

“[...] But perhaps,” added he, stopping in his walk, and turning towards her, “these offences might have been overlooked, had not your pride been hurt by my honest confession of the scruples that had long prevented my forming any serious design. These bitter accusations might have been suppressed, had I with greater policy concealed my struggles, and flattered you into the belief of my being impelled by unqualified, unalloyed inclination — by reason, by reflection, by everything. But disguise of every sort is my abhorrence. Nor am I ashamed of the feelings I related. They were natural and just. Could you expect me to rejoice in the inferiority of your

connections? To congratulate myself on the hope of relations, whose condition in life is so decidedly beneath my own?"

Chapter 35 (Volume 2, Chapter 12)

In his letter, what is Mr. Darcy's account of his reasons for not wishing Mr. Bingley to marry into the Bennet family?

1. Jane's connections are inferior.

Here Mr. Darcy is correct.

Of course, Jane and Elizabeth have the same connections. Their connections are inferior.

A. Their connections are inferior in point of money.

The Bennets simply do not have much money.

B. Their connections are inferior in point of sense and taste.

Certainly Lydia and Mrs. Bennet are silly.

C. Their connections are inferior in point of birth.

Mr. Bennet is a gentleman, but not so high-born a gentleman as Mr. Darcy or Mr. Bingley. In addition, Mrs. Bennet is not as high-born as Mr. Bennet.

2. Jane is not in love with Mr. Bingley.

Here Mr. Darcy is wrong.

Mr. Darcy did closely observe Mr. Bingley and Jane. He thought that Mr. Bingley was in love with Jane, but that Jane was not in love with Mr. Bingley. However, Jane's character is quiet and she does not display a lot of emotion. Jane was and is in love with Mr. Bingley. (By the way, Mr. Darcy thought that Mr. Bingley was more in love with Jane than he had ever been in love before.)

Mr. Darcy does not apologize even now.

How did Mr. Darcy keep Mr. Bingley from proposing to Jane?

1. He followed him into town (London) with the express purpose of keeping him there and persuading him not to return to Netherfield.
2. He pointed out the inferiority of Jane's connections.
3. He said — honestly but mistakenly — that Jane did not love him.
4. He kept news of Jane's being in London away from Mr. Bingley.

This is something that Mr. Darcy cannot think about with satisfaction. Apparently, he feels guilty over this.

He did not tell Mr. Bingley that Jane was in London because Mr. Bingley was still in love with her.

In his letter, what is Mr. Darcy's explanation of his relationship with Mr. Wickham? What is Mr. Darcy's opinion of Mr. Wickham's character? Why?

1. As Mr. Wickham has said, his father was much beloved of the late Mr. Darcy (the present Mr. Darcy's father). In his will, the late Mr. Darcy said that he wanted the present Mr. Wickham taken care of.
2. As a young man, Mr. Wickham was careful to hide his real character from the late Mr. Darcy, but the younger Mr. Darcy was aware of his character, having seen Mr. Wickham in unguarded moments — and his character was bad.
3. Mr. Wickham decided not to go into the clergy and so gave up his claim to a living that had been promised him. Instead of the living, he begged for money — 3,000 pounds instead of the 1,000 pounds that were promised him — to

study law. However, he did not study law, but instead partied.

4. Mr. Wickham blew his money, and then he wanted to become a clergyman and get the living which he feels had been promised him. Of course, Mr. Darcy knew and knows that Mr. Wickham should not in the clergy and therefore he did not get him the living.

5. Mr. Wickham convinced Mr. Darcy's sister, Georgiana, who is only 15 years old, to marry him. Mr. Darcy was able to stop the marriage. Mr. Wickham wanted Georgiana's fortune, which is 30,000 pounds, and he wanted revenge on Mr. Darcy.

Notes:

- The late Mr. Wickham took care of the late Mr. Darcy's property.
- Mr. Wickham's mother was a spendthrift.

What criticism would an English teacher make of Mr. Darcy's letter when it comes to paragraphing?

Mr. Darcy's letter is one huge paragraph.

It needs to be broken up into shorter paragraphs.

For example, a break in the paragraph could come when Mr. Darcy stops writing about Mr. Bingley and Jane and starts writing about Mr. Wickham.

Mr. Darcy may have written his letter as one long paragraph because he was too emotional to think in terms of paragraphing.

Mr. Darcy even wrote on the inside of the envelope.

However, letters (when sent) were expensive back then, and Mr. Darcy may have formed the habit of writing this way

(and in a close hand) simply to save money. (Of course, Mr. Darcy hand-delivers this letter; therefore, no expense is incurred.)

In this society, is it proper for an unmarried man to write a letter to an unmarried woman to whom he is not related or engaged? In this society, is it proper for an unmarried woman to write a letter to an unmarried man to whom she is not related or engaged?

- No, it is not; however, the importance of the letter justifies Mr. Darcy's writing it. If an unmarried man and an unmarried woman were to write letters to each other, people would assume that they are engaged to be married (assuming that they were not relatives).
- Mr. Darcy hand-delivers the letter because it would be awkward if anyone at Rosings were to see that he had written a letter to Elizabeth.
- Elizabeth does not answer the letter because it would be improper to do so.

Chapter 36 (Volume 2, Chapter 13)

Elizabeth reconsiders her opinion of Mr. Wickham. What evidence does she come up with from her own experience that is against Mr. Wickham?

1. Elizabeth can remember no actual good that Mr. Wickham has done, although everyone of her acquaintance except Mr. Darcy and the Bingleys approved of him.

On p. 200, we read:

[...] She tried to recollect some instance of goodness, some distinguished trait of integrity or benevolence, that might rescue him from the attacks of Mr. Darcy; or at least, by the predominance of virtue, atone for those casual errors, under which she would endeavour to class what Mr. Darcy had described as the idleness and vice of many years continuance. But no such recollection befriended her. She could see him instantly before her, in every charm of air and address; but she could remember no more substantial good than the general approbation of the neighbourhood, and the regard which his social powers had gained him in the mess. After pausing on this point a considerable while, she once more continued to read.

2. Elizabeth remembers her first conversation with Mr. Wickham, and she now thinks that it is odd that he divulged such personal parts of his history to a stranger.

On p. 200, we read:

She perfectly remembered every thing that had passed in conversation between Wickham and herself in their first evening at Mr. Philips's. Many of his expressions were still fresh in her memory. She was now struck with the impropriety of such

communications to a stranger, and wondered it had escaped her before. She saw the indelicacy of putting himself forward as he had done, and the inconsistency of his professions with his conduct.

3. Elizabeth remembers that Mr. Wickham had said that he would not avoid Mr. Darcy, but instead that Mr. Darcy must avoid him. However, on the occasion of the ball at Netherfield, it was Mr. Wickham who chose not to attend, although Mr. Bingley had invited him.

On pp. 200-201, we read:

[...] She remembered that he had boasted of having no fear of seeing Mr. Darcy — that Mr. Darcy might leave the country, but that *he* should stand his ground; yet he had avoided the Netherfield ball the very next week.

4. Mr. Wickham waited until Mr. Darcy left Netherfield, then he told his story to everyone — with no one left to contradict it. Also, Mr. Wickham did this although “he had assured her that respect for the father would always prevent his exposing the son” (201).

On pp. 201, we read:

[...] She remembered also, that till the Netherfield family had quitted the country, he had told his story to no one but herself; but that after their removal, it had been every where discussed; that he had then no reserves, no scruples in sinking Mr. Darcy’s character, though he had assured her that respect for the father would always prevent his exposing the son.

5. Now Elizabeth regards Mr. Wickham’s attentions to Miss King to be the sign of a mercenary character.

On p. 201, we read:

[...] His attentions to Miss King were now the consequence of views solely and hatefully mercenary; and the mediocrity of her fortune proved no longer the moderation of his wishes, but his eagerness to grasp at anything.

Note: Miss King has just inherited £10,000. From Mr. Collins' marriage proposal to Elizabeth, we know that Elizabeth will get "one thousand pounds in the 4 percents, which will not be yours till after your mother's decease" (104). Miss King's fortune is mediocre, but much bigger than Elizabeth's.

6. In addition, Elizabeth becomes aware that no one in her acquaintance has cast aspersions on Mr. Darcy's character other than to say that he is proud.

On p. 201, we read:

[...] and in farther justification of Mr. Darcy, she could not but allow that Mr. Bingley, when questioned by Jane, had long ago asserted his blamelessness in the affair; that, proud and repulsive as were his manners, she had never, in the whole course of their acquaintance — an acquaintance which had latterly brought them much together, and given her a sort of intimacy with his ways — seen anything that betrayed him to be unprincipled or unjust — anything that spoke him of irreligious or immoral habits. That among his own connections he was esteemed and valued — that even Wickham had allowed him merit as a brother, and that she had often heard him speak so affectionately of his sister as to prove him capable of *some* amiable feeling. That had his actions been what Wickham represented them, so gross a violation of every thing right could hardly have been concealed from the world; and that friendship between a person capable of it, and such

an amiable man as Mr. Bingley, was incomprehensible.

Note: In Mr. Wickham's first conversation with Elizabeth, in which he told her how badly Mr. Darcy had treated him, Mr. Wickham committed the fallacy of suppressed evidence. He left out (suppressed) all the evidence that made he (Mr. Wickham) look bad. In the fallacy of suppressed evidence, the arguer leaves out important information that is needed to reach an accurate conclusion. Mr. Wickham argues that Mr. Darcy is guilty of bad behavior, but the reader who knows all the relevant evidence realizes that Mr. Darcy is innocent.

Mr. Darcy has said that he was unaware that Jane loved Mr. Bingley. Is there some justice in what he said?

Yes.

Someone could argue that Mr. Darcy may possibly have wanted to spare his friend the pain of rejection because Mr. Darcy thought that Jane did not love Mr. Bingley. This, however, is doubtful. Mr. Darcy is aware that many women marry for money and for social position.

Charlotte said early in the novel that Jane should show more affection.

Elizabeth is herself aware that Jane does not display her emotions much.

On pp. 22-23, Charlotte says:

“It may perhaps be pleasant,” replied Charlotte, “to be able to impose on the public in such a case; but it is sometimes a disadvantage to be so very guarded. If a woman conceals her affection with the same skill from the object of it, she may lose the opportunity of fixing him; and it will then be but poor consolation to believe the world equally in the dark. There is so

much of gratitude or vanity in almost every attachment, that it is not safe to leave any to itself. We can all *begin* freely — a slight preference is natural enough; but there are very few of us who have heart enough to be really in love without encouragement. In nine cases out of ten, a woman had better show *more* affection than she feels. Bingley likes your sister undoubtedly; but he may never do more than like her, if she does not help him on.”

On p. 202, we read:

From herself to Jane — from Jane to Bingley, her thoughts were in a line which soon brought to her recollection that Mr. Darcy’s explanation *there* had appeared very insufficient; and she read it again. Widely different was the effect of a second perusal. How could she deny that credit to his assertions, in one instance, which she had been obliged to give in the other? He declared himself to have been totally unsuspecting of her sister’s attachment; and she could not help remembering what Charlotte’s opinion had always been. Neither could she deny the justice of his description of Jane. She felt that Jane’s feelings, though fervent, were little displayed, and that there was a constant complacency in her air and manner not often united with great sensibility.

Mr. Darcy has said that some of Elizabeth’s relatives are objectionable. Is there some justice in what he said?

Hell, yes.

Just think of what happened at the Netherfield ball.

On p. 202, we read:

When she came to that part of the letter in which her family were mentioned, in terms of such mortifying yet merited reproach, her sense of shame was severe. The justice of the charge struck her too forcibly for denial, and the circumstances to which he particularly alluded, as having passed at the Netherfield ball, and as confirming all his first disapprobation, could not have made a stronger impression on his mind than on hers.

The compliment to herself and her sister was not unfelt. It soothed, but it could not console her for the contempt which had been thus self-attracted by the rest of her family; and as she considered that Jane's disappointment had in fact been the work of her nearest relations, and reflected how materially the credit of both must be hurt by such impropriety of conduct, she felt depressed beyond anything she had ever known before.

The title of this novel is *Pride and Prejudice*. Why do you suppose Jane Austen chose that title?

“Prejudice” mainly refers to Elizabeth; “pride” mainly refers to Mr. Darcy.

There can be no doubt that Mr. Darcy is proud, although he would justify it as proper pride.

Elizabeth has been early on prejudiced against Mr. Darcy.

On p. 198, we read:

If Elizabeth, when Mr. Darcy gave her the letter, did not expect it to contain a renewal of his offers, she had formed no expectation at all of its contents. But such as they were, it may be well supposed how eagerly she went through them, and what a contrariety of emotion they excited. Her feelings as

she read were scarcely to be defined. With amazement did she first understand that he believed any apology to be in his power; and steadfastly was she persuaded that he could have no explanation to give, which a just sense of shame would not conceal. With a strong prejudice against everything he might say, she began his account of what had happened at Netherfield. She read, with an eagerness which hardly left her power of comprehension, and from impatience of knowing what the next sentence might bring, was incapable of attending to the sense of the one before her eyes. His belief of her sister's insensibility, she instantly resolved to be false, and his account of the real, the worst objections to the match, made her too angry to have any wish of doing him justice. He expressed no regret for what he had done which satisfied her; his style was not penitent, but haughty. It was all pride and insolence.

Of course, Elizabeth begins to overcome her prejudice.

Chapter 37 (Volume 2, Chapter 14)

What are the things that Elizabeth thinks about in this chapter?

1. Elizabeth thinks humorously that she could have been presented to Lady Catherine as her future niece (because of her becoming Mrs. Darcy). This is humorous because she knows that Lady Catherine's reaction would be bad.
2. Elizabeth thinks about Mr. Darcy's letter all the time, and she almost learns it by heart.
3. Elizabeth thinks about the silly members of her family — and she blames them for making Jane unhappy (because Jane did not get engaged to Mr. Bingley).
4. Elizabeth thinks about Mr. Bingley. He did love Jane, and if all had gone as it should, they would have married — and married happily.

By the way, Mr. Darcy has left Rosings.

Write a brief character analysis of Lady Catherine based on what you learn in this chapter.

Lady Catherine is as opinionated and as bossy as ever:

1. Lady Catherine wants the company of the Collinses and their guests now that the gentlemen have left. (The company of the Collinses and their guests is desired when no better company is to be had.)
2. Lady Catherine thinks that Mr. Darcy's spirits were dashed because he had to leave Rosings. (Of course, we know that they were dashed because Elizabeth rejected his proposal of marriage.)
3. Lady Catherine thinks that Elizabeth ought to stay longer. Elizabeth has stayed six weeks, and

Lady Catherine thinks that she ought to stay two months. (Visits in Jane Austen's time were longer because travel was more difficult and very expensive.)

4. Lady Catherine thinks that young women ought to travel not alone, but with men — so the men, apparently, can protect them.

5. Lady Catherine thinks that there is only one correct way to place gowns while packing (and Maria believes her and repacks her clothing when she returns to the Collins' home after leaving Rosings).

On p. 207, we read:

Their engagements at Rosings were as frequent during the last week of her stay as they had been at first. The very last evening was spent there; and her Ladyship again enquired minutely into the particulars of their journey, gave them directions as to the best method of packing, and was so urgent on the necessity of placing gowns in the only right way, that Maria thought herself obliged, on her return, to undo all the work of the morning, and pack her trunk afresh.

Note: Charlotte is separated from her family by, according to Mr. Darcy, 50 miles of good miles, which results in a half-day's travel. However, although Mr. Collins has a good income, it will not allow Charlotte to frequently visit home.

Chapter 38 (Volume 2, Chapter 15)

What do you suppose Elizabeth is thinking about during her ride to London?

Three things:

1) Her visit with Charlotte.

Mr. Collins remains a fool, but Elizabeth knows that Charlotte went into the marriage with her eyes open. Charlotte regrets that Maria and Elizabeth are leaving, but she is still happy with her establishment.

Elizabeth may also reflect on how obnoxious Mr. Collins' sucking up to the residents of Rosings really is.

2) Her visit with the Gardiners.

They are a favorite aunt and uncle, and they are sensible.

3) Mr. Darcy's proposal and how much of it she can reveal to Jane.

Elizabeth decides not to tell Jane anything about it in London, but to wait until they are home again.

Elizabeth, of course, wants to tell Jane right away, but she doesn't because

- 1) she is wondering how much she ought to tell, and
- 2) she is worried about saying something about Mr. Bingley that will make Jane upset.

Chapter 39 (Volume 2, Chapter 16)

Write a brief character analysis of Lydia based on what you learn in this chapter.

1. Lydia is careless with money.

A. She and Kitty wanted to treat Jane and Elizabeth and Maria to a luncheon. They ordered the food, but then they spent all the money in a milliner shop.

Milliner: “One who makes or sells esp. women’s hats.” — *The American Heritage Dictionary*.

B. Lydia spent her money on an ugly bonnet. She, however, thinks that she can tear it to pieces, then make it up again better than before with some “prettier-coloured satin” (211).

2. Lydia does not think ahead. She ought to know that her hatbox (because of the new bonnet) will take up room in the coach they are riding, and she ought to know that Elizabeth and Jane and Maria will already have a lot of luggage, but she buys the bonnet anyway.

3. Lydia chases after soldiers, and she would love to go to Brighton because the soldiers will be stationed there after they leave Meryton.

4. Lydia is willing to gossip in front of the waiter. Both Jane and Elizabeth are intelligent enough to send the waiter away.

5. Lydia gossips. She knows that Mary King and Mr. Wickham will not be married.

6. Lydia is coarse in her expression. What she says about Mary King is not nice.

On p. 212, we read:

“I am sure there is not on *his*. I will answer for it he never cared three straws about her. Who *could* about such a nasty little freckled thing?”

Elizabeth was shocked to think that, however incapable of such coarseness of *expression* herself, the coarseness of the *sentiment* was little other than her own breast had formerly harboured and fancied liberal!

7. Lydia wants to be married, and she says that Jane is in danger of being an old maid. (Jane is 23.) This, of course, is rude to Jane.

8. Lydia likes jokes, such as dressing a man in a woman’s gown and passing him off as a woman.

On p. 213, we read:

“[...] We dressed up Chamberlayne in woman’s clothes, on purpose to pass for a lady, only think what fun! Not a soul knew of it but Col. and Mrs. Forster, and Kitty and me, except my aunt, for we were forced to borrow one of her gowns; and you cannot imagine how well he looked! When Denny, and Wickham, and Pratt, and two or three more of the men came in, they did not know him in the least. Lord! How I laughed! And so did Mrs. Forster. I thought I should have died. And *that* made the men suspect something, and then they soon found out what was the matter.”

9. Lydia is high spirited and loud.

On p. 213, we read:

With such kind of histories of their parties and good jokes did Lydia, assisted by Kitty’s hints and additions, endeavour to amuse her companions all

the way to Longbourn. Elizabeth listened as little as she could, but there was no escaping the frequent mention of Wickham's name.

On p. 214, we read:

“Oh! Mary,” said she, “I wish you had gone with us, for we had such fun! As we went along, Kitty and me drew up all the blinds, and pretended there was nobody in the coach; and I should have gone so all the way, if Kitty had not been sick; and when we got to the George, I do think we behaved very handsomely, for we treated the other three with the nicest cold luncheon in the world, and if you would have gone, we would have treated you, too. And then when we came away it was such fun! I thought we never should have got into the coach. I was ready to die of laughter. And then we were so merry all the way home! *We* talked and laughed so loud, that anybody might have heard us ten miles off!”

10. Lydia does not listen to Mary.

On p. 214, we read:

But of this answer Lydia heard not a word. She seldom listened to anybody for more than half a minute, and never attended to Mary at all.

Is the Bennet family likely to go to Brighton?

No, not at all.

Mr. Bennet delights in teasing his family, and he teases them by giving Mrs. Bennet “vague and equivocal” (215) answers to her inquiries about going to Brighton. Elizabeth sees “directly” (215) that Mr. Bennet will not allow the family to go to Brighton, but Mrs. Bennet is not as intelligent as

Elizabeth, and she thinks that there is a chance that the family will vacation there.

Mr. Bennet, of course, loves his freedom. Going to Brighton could mean spending too much money, so he doesn't want to go there. Mr. Bennet has a hard time keeping his wife from spending too much money.

Elizabeth, of course, does not want to go there because she doesn't want the Bennet daughters to get the reputation of chasing soldiers and because Mr. Wickham will be there. Elizabeth also does not want to go to the village right away because of the same thing.

On pp. 211-212, we read:

“They are going to be encamped near Brighton; and I do so want papa to take us all there for the summer! It would be such a delicious scheme, and I dare say would hardly cost anything at all. Mamma would like to go too, of all things! Only think what a miserable summer else we shall have!”

“Yes,” thought Elizabeth, “*that* would be a delightful scheme, indeed, and completely do for us at once. Good Heaven! Brighton, and a whole campful of soldiers, to us, who have been overset already by one poor regiment of militia, and the monthly balls of Meryton.”

Note: Lydia does not think that going to Brighton would cost much, but we find out later that Mr. Bennet thinks differently. Since we know that travel in Jane Austen's day was expensive, we know that Mr. Bennet is right and Lydia is wrong and thoughtless.

On p. 215, we read:

She had not been many hours at home, before she found that the Brighton scheme, of which Lydia had given them a hint at the inn, was under frequent discussion between her parents. Elizabeth saw directly that her father had not the smallest intention of yielding; but his answers were at the same time so vague and equivocal, that her mother, though often disheartened, had never yet despaired of succeeding at last.

Chapter 40 (Volume 2, Chapter 17)

What is Jane's reaction to Elizabeth's news? What does Elizabeth NOT tell her?

Elizabeth does not tell Jane anything about Mr. Bingley. Her reasoning is that the proposal will never happen, and therefore she ought not to tell Jane something that will make her unhappy.

Jane is so kind-hearted that she can't believe that Mr. Wickham would be so evil. She strongly prefers that neither Mr. Darcy nor Mr. Wickham is evil and that there must be a way of explaining things so that neither man is evil. Elizabeth, who is more practical, says that this kind of explanation is not possible, and that one man must be good and the other evil. For her money, Elizabeth is betting that Mr. Darcy is the good man and that Mr. Wickham is the evil man.

On p. 216-217, we read:

She [Elizabeth] then spoke of the letter, repeating the whole of its contents as far as they concerned George Wickham. What a stroke was this for poor Jane, who would willingly have gone through the world without believing that so much wickedness existed in the whole race of mankind, as was here collected in one individual. Nor was Darcy's vindication, though grateful to her feelings, capable of consoling her for such discovery. Most earnestly did she labour to prove the probability of error, and seek to clear one without involving the other.

"This will not do," said Elizabeth. "You never will be able to make both of them good for anything. Take your choice, but you must be satisfied with only one. There is but such a quantity of merit between them; just enough to make one good sort of man; and of late

it has been shifting about pretty much. For my part, I am inclined to believe it all Mr. Darcy's, but you shall do as you choose."

Why doesn't Elizabeth alert the neighborhood to Mr. Wickham's character as she now understands it? Should she?

There are reasons for and against not telling everyone about Mr. Wickham's character.

Reasons for Telling

Mr. Wickham's character is evil. Why should everyone be allowed to think that his character is good?

Telling everyone about Mr. Wickham's character may prevent him from doing more evil in the future. (People will be on their guard about Mr. Wickham.)

Reasons for Not Telling

Why would anyone believe Elizabeth's version of Mr. Wickham's character? After all, she can't tell about Miss Darcy. Mr. Darcy has not authorized Elizabeth to make the contents of his letter public.

It would "kill" people to think well of Mr. Darcy after having thought so badly of him for so long. (Elizabeth says this, but not in these words. She is exaggerating.)

Mr. Wickham will soon leave anyway.

Jane thinks that the disclosure of Mr. Wickham's character would ruin him. She is too kind-hearted to want to do this, even if he deserves it. She prefers to think that Mr. Wickham may be willing to reform himself.

Does Elizabeth do the right thing in not telling everybody that Mr. Wickham is evil?

Future events will show that Elizabeth made a mistake, but it is difficult to see how she could have done otherwise.

Is Jane happy?

No. She is still in love with Mr. Bingley and pining over him.

We read that Jane's love for Mr. Bingley is a first love as Jane has never been in love before.

Of course, first loves are often not serious loves, but Jane's character and age are such that her first love is a real love.

It seems that Mr. Bingley will not return to Netherfield.

On pp. 219, we read:

She was now, on being settled at home, at leisure to observe the real state of her sister's spirits. Jane was not happy. She still cherished a very tender affection for Bingley. Having never even fancied herself in love before, her regard had all the warmth of first attachment, and, from her age and disposition, greater steadiness than first attachments often boast; and so fervently did she value his remembrance, and prefer him to every other man, that all her good sense, and all her attention to the feelings of her friends, were requisite to check the indulgence of those regrets which must have been injurious to her own health and their tranquillity.

"Well, Lizzy," said Mrs. Bennet one day, "what is your opinion *now* of this sad business of Jane's? For my part, I am determined never to speak of it again to anybody. I told my sister Philips so the other day. But I cannot find out that Jane saw anything of him in London. Well, he is a very undeserving young man

— and I do not suppose there is the least chance in the world of her ever getting him now. There is no talk of his coming to Netherfield again in the summer; and I have enquired of everybody, too, who is likely to know.”

Chapter 41 (Volume 2, Chapter 18)

Why does Elizabeth not want her father to allow Lydia to go to Brighton?

1. Elizabeth thinks that Lydia will make a fool of herself.

Of course, Lydia will do that. Basically, Lydia will flirt with officers. Lydia will be out to have as much fun as possible. Lydia is selfish, of course — see the way that she treats Kitty in this chapter. Kitty is crying because she can't go to Brighton, and Lydia ignores her grief.

Mr. Bennet agrees that Lydia will make a fool of herself.

2. Elizabeth thinks Lydia's actions will reflect on the reputation of the other Bennet girls.

Mr. Bennet knows that this bothers Elizabeth, but he tells her that although the three youngest Bennet girls are silly, anyone who knows Jane and Elizabeth must respect them.

3. Elizabeth knows that Lydia's actions — among the actions of other members of the Bennet family — have already hurt the family by making Mr. Darcy not want his friend Mr. Bingley to marry into the Bennet family.

Elizabeth does not tell her father about this.

4. Lydia will have greater opportunities of running wild at Brighton than she does at home.

5. Lydia is unable to benefit from the company of Mrs. Forster, who is very young, likes practical jokes (such as dressing a male servant in women's clothing), and a bad chaperone. Mrs. Forster is a lot like Lydia.

On p. 222, we read:

[...] She [Elizabeth] represented to him [Mr. Bennet] all the improprieties of Lydia's general behaviour,

the little advantage she could derive from the friendship of such a woman as Mrs. Forster, and the probability of her being yet more imprudent with such a companion at Brighton, where the temptations must be greater than at home.

Why does Mr. Bennet decide to allow Lydia to go to Brighton?

Mr. Bennet decides to let Lydia go to Brighton with Mrs. Forster because:

1. It will make Lydia happy.
2. It will cost the Bennets very little money or inconvenience.
3. Colonel Forster is a sensible man.
4. Lydia is too poor to be anyone's prey — meaning that she is so poor that no one will marry her for her money.
5. Lydia can't get much "worse without authorizing us to lock her up for the rest of her life" (224).

On p. 222, Mr. Bennet says,

"Lydia will never be easy till she has exposed herself in some public place or other, and we can never expect her to do it with so little expense or inconvenience to her family as under the present circumstances."

On pp. 223-224, Mr. Bennet says,

"Do not make yourself uneasy, my love. Wherever you and Jane are known, you must be respected and valued; and you will not appear to less advantage for having a couple of — or I may say, three — very silly sisters. We shall have no peace at Longbourn if Lydia does not go to Brighton. Let her go then. Colonel

Forster is a sensible man, and will keep her out of any real mischief; and she is luckily too poor to be an object of prey to anybody. At Brighton she will be of less importance, even as a common flirt, than she has been here. The officers will find women better worth their notice. Let us hope, therefore, that her being there may teach her her own insignificance. At any rate, she cannot grow many degrees worse without authorizing us to lock her up for the rest of her life.”

In which ways are Mrs. Bennet and Lydia similar?

1. Both are empty headed and silly.
2. Both like soldiers — at least Mrs. Bennet used to.
3. Both are bad with money.

Mrs. Bennet would love to overspend their income.

4. Both want all the Bennet daughters to be married.
5. Both are fun loving.
6. Both want Lydia to go to Brighton.

Is the conversation between Elizabeth and Mr. Wickham satisfactory to Elizabeth? To Mr. Wickham?

It may not be satisfactory to either of them.

Elizabeth

1. Elizabeth no longer cares for Mr. Wickham’s manner.

On pp. 224-225, we read:

Elizabeth was now to see Mr. Wickham for the last time. Having been frequently in company with him since her return, agitation was pretty well over; the agitations of former partiality entirely so. She had even learnt to detect, in the very gentleness which

had first delighted her, an affectation and a sameness to disgust and weary.

2. Elizabeth is insulted when Mr. Wickham singles her out. It is as if Mr. Wickham thinks that when he beckons, Elizabeth will run to him, even if Mr. Wickham has been chasing other women — such as Mary King — in the meanwhile.

On p. 225, we read:

[...] In his present behaviour to herself, moreover, she had a fresh source of displeasure, for the inclination he soon testified of renewing those attentions which had marked the early part of their acquaintance could only serve, after what had since passed, to provoke her. She lost all concern for him in finding herself thus selected as the object of such idle and frivolous gallantry; and while she steadily repressed it, could not but feel the reproof contained in his believing that, however long, and for whatever cause, his attentions had been withdrawn, her vanity would be gratified and her preference secured at any time by their renewal.

3. Elizabeth, of course, now knows Mr. Wickham's character, and she no longer cares for him.

Mr. Wickham

Elizabeth is able to subtly let Mr. Wickham know that she has heard the other side of the story and she no longer believes Mr. Wickham's version of the story.

Mr. Wickham says that he is glad that Mr. Darcy has at least improved in "*appearance*" (226), meaning that Mr. Darcy has not improved in reality.

Both Elizabeth and Mr. Wickham

Apparently, neither wishes to ever see the other again.

On p. 226, we read:

Elizabeth could not repress a smile at this, but she answered only by a slight inclination of the head. She saw that he wanted to engage her on the old subject of his grievances, and she was in no humour to indulge him. The rest of the evening passed with the *appearance*, on his side, of usual cheerfulness, but with no farther attempt to distinguish Elizabeth; and they parted at last with mutual civility, and possibly a mutual desire of never meeting again.

Chapter 42 (Volume 2, Chapter 19)

Do Mr. and Mrs. Bennet have a good marriage?

No. He was young, and he fell in love with a woman who was young and pretty and good humored — and stupid. He married her before finding out that she was stupid. After marrying her and discovering her stupidity, he lost a lot of happiness, but he has stayed married to her and has not sought comfort in sexual affairs.

Mr. Bennet is not blameless in his marriage. He sometimes holds his wife up to ridicule in front of their children, and he does not raise his youngest daughters as well as he ought to.

On pp. 228-229, we read:

Had Elizabeth's opinion been all drawn from her own family, she could not have formed a very pleasing picture of conjugal felicity or domestic comfort. Her father, captivated by youth and beauty, and that appearance of good humour which youth and beauty generally give, had married a woman whose weak understanding and illiberal mind had, very early in their marriage, put an end to all real affection for her. Respect, esteem, and confidence had vanished forever; and all his views of domestic happiness were overthrown. But Mr. Bennet was not of a disposition to seek comfort, for the disappointment which his own imprudence had brought on, in any of those pleasures which too often console the unfortunate for their folly or their vice. He was fond of the country and of books; and from these tastes had arisen his principal enjoyments. To his wife he was very little otherwise indebted, than as her ignorance and folly had contributed to his amusement. This is not the sort of happiness which a man would in general wish to owe to his wife; but

where other powers of entertainment are wanting, the true philosopher will derive benefit from such as are given.

Elizabeth, however, had never been blind to the impropriety of her father's behaviour as a husband. She had always seen it with pain; but respecting his abilities, and grateful for his affectionate treatment of herself, she endeavoured to forget what she could not overlook, and to banish from her thoughts that continual breach of conjugal obligation and decorum which, in exposing his wife to the contempt of her own children, was so highly reprehensible. But she had never felt so strongly as now the disadvantages which must attend the children of so unsuitable a marriage, nor ever been so fully aware of the evils arising from so ill-judged a direction of talents; talents which rightly used, might at least have preserved the respectability of his daughters, even if incapable of enlarging the mind of his wife.

Why doesn't Kitty share Lydia's letters with the rest of the family?

Lydia promised to write long letters to her family, but the letters she writes to her mother are few and short.

Lydia's letters to Kitty are longer than those to her mother, but many, many words are underlined, so Kitty does not share them with the family.

Apparently, the underlined words are about flirtations and about men, so Kitty does not share them.

On pp. 229-230, we read:

When Lydia went away, she promised to write very often and very minutely to her mother and Kitty; but her letters were always long expected, and always

very short. Those to her mother contained little else, than that they were just returned from the library, where such and such officers had attended them, and where she had seen such beautiful ornaments as made her quite wild; that she had a new gown, or a new parasol, which she would have described more fully, but was obliged to leave off in a violent hurry, as Mrs. Forster called her, and they were going to the camp; and from her correspondence with her sister, there was still less to be learnt — for her letters to Kitty, though rather longer, were much too full of lines under the words to be made public.

How does Elizabeth end up going to Pemberley, which is Mr. Darcy's estate?

We know of course that the Gardiners have invited Elizabeth to take a tour with them to the Lakes. Unfortunately, Elizabeth receives a letter from Mrs. Gardiner. They will start out later than expected and return from the trip sooner than expected, so they won't have time to go all the way to the Lakes, but they will go to Derbyshire, which is where Mr. Darcy's estate of Pemberley is located. Elizabeth is somewhat disappointed, but soon happy again. Mrs. Gardiner is happy, because she used to live in that particular part of the country.

In Derbyshire, Mrs. Gardiner expresses an interest in seeing Pemberley again. Elizabeth does not, of course, want to run the risk of seeing Mr. Darcy again. However, she makes discreet inquiries into whether the family is present at Pemberley, finds that they are not, and agrees to go to Pemberley.

Is this a good place to end Volume 2? Will the audience be willing to keep reading?

This is an excellent place to end. The audience will be wondering what will happen at Pemberley. The audience will wonder what Elizabeth will feel and think when she looks over the property that she could have been mistress of.

Of course, a possibility also exists that Elizabeth and Mr. Darcy will meet there.

On p. 232, we read:

Accordingly, when she retired at night, she asked the chambermaid whether Pemberley were not a very fine place, what was the name of its proprietor, and, with no little alarm, whether the family were down for the summer. A most welcome negative followed the last question — and her alarms being now removed, she was at leisure to feel a great deal of curiosity to see the house herself; and when the subject was revived the next morning, and she was again applied to, could readily answer, and with a proper air of indifference, that she had not really any dislike to the scheme.

To Pemberley, therefore, they were to go.

VOLUME 3: Chapters 43-61

Chapter 43 (Volume 3, Chapter 1)

What is the housekeeper's opinion of Mr. Darcy?

Elizabeth and the Gardiners visit Mr. Darcy's house. Visiting fine houses was common for tourists to do. They would tip the housekeeper and later the gardener for showing them around.

The servants have very high opinions of Mr. Darcy. In fact, the Gardiners think that the servants are showing a very high partiality for their master, and that Mr. Darcy cannot be as good as he is represented.

The Housekeeper

1. The housekeeper does not think that anyone is good enough to marry Mr. Darcy.

On p. 238, we read:

“If your master would marry, you might see more of him.”

“Yes, Sir; but I do not know when *that* will be. I do not know who is good enough for him.”

2. Mr. Darcy has never spoken a cross word to the housekeeper.

On p. 238, we read:

“I say no more than the truth, and what everybody will say that knows him,” replied the other. Elizabeth thought this was going pretty far; and she listened with increasing astonishment as the housekeeper added, “I have never had a cross word from him in my life, and I have known him ever since he was four years old.”

3. Mr. Darcy was sweet tempered and generous hearted when he was a boy.

On p. 238, we read:

“Yes, Sir, I know I am. If I was to go through the world, I could not meet with a better. But I have always observed that they who are good-natured when children are good-natured when they grow up; and he was always the sweetest-tempered, most generous-hearted, boy in the world.”

4. Mr. Darcy will be “affable to the poor” (238).

Affable: “Easy and pleasant to speak to; amiable.” — *The American Heritage Dictionary*

On p. 238, we read:

“His father was an excellent man,” said Mrs. Gardiner.

“Yes, Ma’am, that he was indeed; and his son will be just like him — just as affable to the poor.”

Mr. Gardiner

Mr. Gardiner believes that the housekeeper speaks too highly of her master: Mr. Darcy.

On p. 239, we read:

[...] Mr. Gardiner, highly amused by the kind of family prejudice to which he attributed her excessive commendation of her master, soon led again to the subject; and she dwelt with energy on his many merits, as they proceeded together up the great staircase.

The Housekeeper

5. The housekeeper thinks that Mr. Darcy is “the best landlord, and the best master that ever lived” (239).

On p. 239, we read:

“He is the best landlord, and the best master,” said she, “that ever lived. Not like the wild young men nowadays, who think of nothing but themselves. [...]”

6. Tenants and servants speak highly of Mr. Darcy.

On p. 239, the housekeeper says,

“There is not one of his tenants or servants but what will give him a good name.”

7. Mr. Darcy is not proud.

On p. 239, the housekeeper says,

“Some people call him proud; but I am sure I never saw anything of it. To my fancy, it is only because he does not rattle away like other young men.”

8. Mr. Darcy is a good brother.

On p. 239, we read:

On reaching the spacious lobby above, they were shown into a very pretty sitting-room, lately fitted up with greater elegance and lightness than the apartments below; and were informed that it was but just done to give pleasure to Miss Darcy, who had taken a liking to the room when last at Pemberley.

“He is certainly a good brother,” said Elizabeth, as she walked towards one of the windows.

Mrs. Reynolds anticipated Miss Darcy's delight when she should enter the room. "And this is always the way with him," she added. "Whatever can give his sister any pleasure is sure to be done in a moment. There is nothing he would not do for her."

Mrs. Gardiner

Mrs. Gardiner also thinks that the housekeeper must have overstated Mr. Darcy's virtues (239):

"This fine account of him," whispered her aunt as they walked, "is not quite consistent with his behaviour to our poor friend."

Note: "[O]ur poor friend" is Mr. Wickham.

What is Elizabeth's opinion of Pemberley?

Elizabeth is very highly impressed with Pemberley.

In addition, Elizabeth is very impressed with its owner, Mr. Darcy.

The fine grounds of Pemberley reflect on their owner. His good taste is reflected in the grounds, for it is Mr. Darcy who gives orders to the gardener about what changes need to be made. Everywhere at Pemberley we see the results of Mr. Darcy's good taste. Some people with money have bad taste. Their homes have lots of what interior decorators call "goop." Mr. Darcy's home is not like that.

Elizabeth also thinks "that to be mistress of Pemberley mistress might be something!" (235).

However, Elizabeth is still prejudiced against Mr. Darcy. She thinks to herself that he would not allow her uncle and aunt to visit her if they were married.

On p. 235, we read:

Elizabeth's mind was too full for conversation, but she saw and admired every remarkable spot and point of view. They gradually ascended for half a mile, and then found themselves at the top of a considerable eminence, where the wood ceased, and the eye was instantly caught by Pemberley House, situated on the opposite side of a valley, into which the road, with some abruptness, wound. It was a large, handsome, stone building, standing well on rising ground, and backed by a ridge of high woody hills; and in front, a stream of some natural importance was swelled into greater, but without any artificial appearance. Its banks were neither formal, nor falsely adorned. Elizabeth was delighted. She had never seen a place for which nature had done more, or where natural beauty had been so little counteracted by an awkward taste. They were all of them warm in their admiration; and at that moment she felt that to be mistress of Pemberley might be something!

On p. 236, we read:

The housekeeper came; a respectable-looking, elderly woman, much less fine, and more civil, than she had any notion of finding her. They followed her into the dining-parlour. It was a large, well-proportioned room, handsomely fitted up. Elizabeth, after slightly surveying it, went to a window to enjoy its prospect. The hill, crowned with wood, from which they had descended, receiving increased abruptness from the distance, was a beautiful object. Every disposition of the ground was good; and she looked on the whole scene — the river, the trees scattered on its banks, and the winding of the valley, as far as she could trace it — with delight. As they passed into other rooms, these objects were taking different positions; but from every window there

were beauties to be seen. The rooms were lofty and handsome, and their furniture suitable to the fortune of their proprietor; but Elizabeth saw, with admiration of his taste, that it was neither gaudy nor uselessly fine; with less of splendor, and more real elegance, than the furniture of Rosings.

How does Mr. Darcy treat Elizabeth and her relatives?

Mr. Darcy arrives early (he was not expected until the next day). Of course, he is surprised to see Elizabeth and her relatives.

Mr. Darcy treats Elizabeth and her relatives with great kindness.

1. Mr. Darcy speaks kindly, though distractedly, to Elizabeth. If he had wanted, he could have ordered her and his companions off his property. After all, it is his property.

On p. 241, we read:

[...] Nor did he seem much more at ease; when he spoke, his accent had none of its usual sedateness; and he repeated his enquiries as to the time of her having left Longbourn, and of her stay in Derbyshire, so often, and in so hurried a way, as plainly spoke the distraction of his thoughts.

2. Mr. Darcy walks after them while they are walking on his property. If he had wanted, he could have left them alone.

3. Mr. Darcy asks to be introduced to Elizabeth's companions. Mr. Darcy, being the superior, must ask for the introduction if it is to occur. Mr. Darcy is surprised to learn who they are — after all, Mr. Gardiner is in trade — but he is kind to the Gardiners.

By the way, the Gardiners are sensible people, and Elizabeth is not ashamed of them.

4. Mr. Darcy walks with Mr. Gardiner and invites him to fish whenever he wishes to on his property. Later, he walks with Elizabeth when Mrs. Gardiner, being tired, wishes to walk with her husband while he supports her.

5. Mr. Darcy asks to be allowed to introduce his sister to Elizabeth.

6. Mr. Darcy invites Elizabeth and the Gardiners in for refreshments — an invitation which they decline.

Mr. Darcy is surprised by how refined the Gardiners are — apparently, he thinks that people in trade cannot be so well mannered and refined. Mr. Gardiner looks and acts like a gentleman.

What are the Gardiners' opinions of Mr. Darcy?

Good, but they are a little suspicious.

1. The Gardiners think that Mr. Darcy is superior to anything that they expected. Mr. Gardiner says that Mr. Darcy “is perfectly well behaved, polite, and unassuming” (246).

On p. 246, we read:

The observations of her uncle and aunt now began; and each of them pronounced him to be infinitely superior to anything they had expected. “He is perfectly well behaved, polite, and unassuming,” said her uncle.

2. Mrs. Gardiner thinks that Mr. Darcy is stately but not proud.

On p. 246, we read:

“There *is* something a little stately in him to be sure,” replied her aunt, “but it is confined to his air, and is not unbecoming. I can now say with the housekeeper,

that though some people may call him proud, *I* have seen nothing of it.”

3. Mrs. Gardiner is impressed with Mr. Darcy’s behavior toward Elizabeth and herself and her husband.

On p. 246, we read:

“I was never more surprised than by his behaviour to us. It was more than civil; it was really attentive; and there was no necessity for such attention. His acquaintance with Elizabeth was very trifling.”

4. Mr. Gardiner wonders if Mr. Darcy’s moods are changeable, and he decides not to take up Mr. Darcy’s offer of fishing.

On pp. 246-247, we read:

“To be sure, Lizzy,” said her aunt, “he is not so handsome as Wickham; or rather he has not Wickham’s countenance, for his features are perfectly good. But how came you to tell us that he was so disagreeable?”

Elizabeth excused herself as well as she could; said that she had liked him better when they met in Kent than before, and that she had never seen him so pleasant as this morning.

“But perhaps he may be a little whimsical in his civilities,” replied her uncle. “Your great men often are; and therefore I shall not take him at his word about fishing, as he might change his mind another day, and warn me off his grounds.”

Elizabeth felt that they had entirely mistaken his character, but said nothing.

5. Based on her observations, Mrs. Gardiner does not think that Mr. Darcy could be cruel to Mr. Wickham.

On p. 247, we read:

“From what we have seen of him,” continued Mrs. Gardiner, “I really should not have thought that he could have behaved in so cruel a way by anybody, as he has done by poor Wickham. He has not an ill-natured look. On the contrary, there is something pleasing about his mouth when he speaks. And there is something of dignity in his countenance, that would not give one an unfavourable idea of his heart. But to be sure, the good lady who showed us the house did give him a most flaming character! I could hardly help laughing aloud sometimes. But he is a liberal master, I suppose, and *that* in the eye of a servant comprehends every virtue.”

By the way, Elizabeth defends Mr. Darcy (247):

Elizabeth here felt herself called on to say something in vindication of his behaviour to Wickham; and therefore gave them to understand, in as guarded a manner as she could, that by what she had heard from his relations in Kent, his actions were capable of a very different construction; and that his character was by no means so faulty, nor Wickham’s so amiable, as they had been considered in Hertfordshire. In confirmation of this she related the particulars of all the pecuniary transactions in which they had been connected, without actually naming her authority, but stating it to be such as might be relied on.

Chapter 44 (Volume 3, Chapter 2)

Write a brief character analysis of Miss Darcy, based on what you learn in this chapter.

Miss Darcy's coming so quickly to see Elizabeth is a very great compliment. (Mr. Darcy, of course, is behind this.) She comes to visit the very day that she arrives at Pemberley.

1. Miss Darcy has a reputation for being exceedingly proud, but instead she is exceedingly shy. (She speaks little more than a monosyllable.)
2. Miss Darcy is tall.
3. Miss Darcy is larger than Elizabeth.
4. Miss Darcy is little more than 16.
5. Miss Darcy's figure is fully formed, meaning she has the shape of a woman instead of the shape of a girl.
6. Miss Darcy — Georgiana — is eager to be pleased by Elizabeth. By this, we know that Mr. Darcy has told her about Elizabeth, and Miss Darcy is determined to like her.
7. There is nothing between Miss Darcy and Mr. Bingley, although Miss Darcy had been set up as a rival to Jane.
8. Miss Darcy obeys her brother — she invites the Gardiners and Elizabeth to Pemberley.

On p. 249, we read:

Miss Darcy and her brother appeared, and this formidable introduction took place. With astonishment did Elizabeth see that her new acquaintance was at least as much embarrassed as herself. Since her being at Lambton, she had heard that Miss Darcy was exceedingly proud; but the observation of a very few minutes convinced her that

she was only exceedingly shy. She found it difficult to obtain even a word from her beyond a monosyllable.

Miss Darcy was tall, and on a larger scale than Elizabeth; and, though little more than sixteen, her figure was formed, and her appearance womanly and graceful. She was less handsome than her brother, but there was sense and good humour in her face, and her manners were perfectly unassuming and gentle. Elizabeth, who had expected to find in her as acute and unembarrassed an observer as ever Mr. Darcy had been, was much relieved by discerning such different feelings.

On p. 250, we read:

Elizabeth, on her side, had much to do. She wanted to ascertain the feelings of each of her visitors, she wanted to compose her own, and to make herself agreeable to all; and in the latter object, where she feared most to fail, she was most sure of success, for those to whom she endeavoured to give pleasure were prepossessed in her favour. Bingley was ready, Georgiana was eager, and Darcy determined to be pleased.

On p. 250, we read:

In seeing Bingley, her thoughts naturally flew to her sister; and oh, how ardently did she long to know whether any of his were directed in a like manner. Sometimes she could fancy that he talked less than on former occasions, and once or twice pleased herself with the notion that as he looked at her, he was trying to trace a resemblance. But though this might be imaginary, she could not be deceived as to

his behaviour to Miss Darcy, who had been set up as a rival of Jane.

On p. 251, we read:

Their visitors stayed with them above half an hour, and when they arose to depart, Mr. Darcy called on his sister to join him in expressing their wish of seeing Mr. and Mrs. Gardiner and Miss Bennet to dinner at Pemberley before they left the country. Miss Darcy, though with a diffidence which marked her little in the habit of giving invitations, readily obeyed. Mrs. Gardiner looked at her niece, desirous of knowing how *she*, whom the invitation most concerned, felt disposed as to its acceptance, but Elizabeth had turned away her head. Presuming, however, that this studied avoidance spoke rather a momentary embarrassment, than any dislike of the proposal, and seeing in her husband, who was fond of society, a perfect willingness to accept it, she ventured to engage for her attendance, and the day after the next was fixed on.

Has Mr. Bingley changed? What is he like?

Mr. Bingley also visits Elizabeth and the Gardiners quickly.

Mr. Bingley has not changed. He still seems to think highly of Jane.

Elizabeth was angry at Mr. Bingley before, but she is angry no more.

Mr. Bingley is still good humored, and he asks in a general way about Elizabeth's family.

Mr. Bingley mentions with regret that it has been a long time since he saw Jane.

Mr. Bingley remembers the last time he saw Jane — he even mentions the exact date, although that was over eight months ago.

Elizabeth sees Mr. Bingley looking at her, and she thinks that he must be looking for a resemblance to Jane.

At one point, Elizabeth thinks that Mr. Bingley wishes to hear about Jane, so she obliges him.

On p. 249, we read:

[...] All Elizabeth's anger against him [Mr. Bingley] had been long done away; but, had she still felt any, it could hardly have stood its ground against the unaffected cordiality with which he expressed himself on seeing her again. He enquired in a friendly, though general way, after her family, and looked and spoke with the same good-humoured ease that he had ever done.

On p. 250, we read:

In seeing Bingley, her thoughts naturally flew to her sister; and oh, how ardently did she long to know whether any of his were directed in a like manner. Sometimes she could fancy that he talked less than on former occasions, and once or twice pleased herself with the notion that as he looked at her, he was trying to trace a resemblance. But though this might be imaginary, she could not be deceived as to his behaviour to Miss Darcy, who had been set up as a rival of Jane. No look appeared on either side that spoke particular regard. Nothing occurred between them that could justify the hopes of his sister. On this point she was soon satisfied; and two or three little circumstances occurred ere they parted which, in her anxious interpretation, denoted a recollection of Jane not untinged by tenderness, and a wish of saying

more that might lead to the mention of her, had he dared. He observed to her, at a moment when the others were talking together, and in a tone which had something of real regret, that it “was a very long time since he had had the pleasure of seeing her —” and, before she could reply, he added, “It is above eight months. We have not met since the 26th of November, when we were all dancing together at Netherfield.”

On pp. 251-252, we read:

Bingley expressed great pleasure in the certainty of seeing Elizabeth again, having still a great deal to say to her, and many enquiries to make after all their Hertfordshire friends. Elizabeth, construing all this into a wish of hearing her speak of her sister, was pleased; and on this account, as well as some others, found herself, when their visitors left them, capable of considering the last half hour with some satisfaction, though while it was passing the enjoyment of it had been little. Eager to be alone, and fearful of enquiries or hints from her uncle and aunt, she stayed with them only long enough to hear their favourable opinion of Bingley, and then hurried away to dress.

What do the Gardiners speculate about a possible relationship between Elizabeth and Mr. Darcy?

The Darcys and Mr. Bingley honor Elizabeth by showing up to visit her soon after arriving at Pemberley. Elizabeth had thought that they would arrive at Pemberley, rest, then see her the following day. Instead, they arrive at Pemberley, and they see her early that day. This, of course, makes the Gardiners think that Mr. Darcy is partial toward Elizabeth.

Indeed, the Gardiners watch Mr. Darcy and Elizabeth, and they quickly see that Mr. Darcy is in love with Elizabeth, although they are not sure whether Elizabeth loves Mr. Darcy.

Basically, Mr. Darcy treats them with such respect that the Gardiners know that he loves Elizabeth.

The next day, after breakfast, Mr. Gardiner goes to Pemberley to fish. He has been invited to meet some of the gentlemen there.

On p. 248, we read:

[...] Her uncle and aunt were all amazement; and the embarrassment of her manner as she spoke, joined to the circumstance itself, and many of the circumstances of the preceding day, opened to them a new idea on the business. Nothing had ever suggested it before, but they now felt that there was no other way of accounting for such attentions from such a quarter than by supposing a partiality for their niece.

On pp. 249, we read:

To Mr. and Mrs. Gardiner he was scarcely a less interesting personage than to herself. They had long wished to see him. The whole party before them, indeed, excited a lively attention. The suspicions which had just arisen, of Mr. Darcy and their niece, directed their observation towards each with an earnest, though guarded, enquiry; and they soon drew from those enquiries the full conviction that one of them at least knew what it was to love. Of the lady's sensations they remained a little in doubt; but that the gentleman was overflowing with admiration was evident enough.

On p. 251, we read:

Their visitors stayed with them above half an hour, and when they arose to depart, Mr. Darcy called on his sister to join him in expressing their wish of seeing Mr. and Mrs. Gardiner and Miss Bennet to dinner at Pemberley before they left the country. Miss Darcy, though with a diffidence which marked her little in the habit of giving invitations, readily obeyed. Mrs. Gardiner looked at her niece, desirous of knowing how *she*, whom the invitation most concerned, felt disposed as to its acceptance, but Elizabeth had turned away her head. Presuming, however, that this studied avoidance spoke rather a momentary embarrassment, than any dislike of the proposal, and seeing in her husband, who was fond of society, a perfect willingness to accept it, she ventured to engage for her attendance, and the day after the next was fixed on.

On p. 252, we read:

But she [Elizabeth] had no reason to fear Mr. and Mrs. Gardiner's curiosity; it was not their wish to force her communication. It was evident that she was much better acquainted with Mr. Darcy than they had before any idea of; it was evident that he was very much in love with her. They saw much to interest, but nothing to justify enquiry.

What do we learn about Mr. Wickham in this chapter?

1. Mr. Wickham is not well liked in this area.
2. When Mr. Wickham left the area, he left behind a lot of debts.
3. Mr. Darcy paid the debts for him.

On p. 252, we read:

With respect to Wickham, the travellers soon found that he was not held there in much estimation; for though the chief of his concerns with the son of his patron were imperfectly understood, it was yet a well-known fact that on his quitting Derbyshire he had left many debts behind him, which Mr. Darcy afterwards discharged.

Chapter 45 (Volume 3, Chapter 3)

Write a brief character analysis of Miss Darcy, based on what you learn in this chapter.

Miss Darcy is the hostess.

What we learn about Miss Darcy here confirms what we have learned about her in the previous chapter:

1. Miss Darcy is shy.
2. Miss Darcy respects her brother and her brother's wishes.
- 3., Miss Darcy is eager to like Elizabeth.

On p. 255, we read:

In this room they were received by Miss Darcy, who was sitting there with Mrs. Hurst and Miss Bingley, and the lady with whom she lived in London. Georgiana's reception of them was very civil; but attended with all that embarrassment which, though proceeding from shyness and the fear of doing wrong, would easily give to those who felt themselves inferior the belief of her being proud and reserved. Mrs. Gardiner and her niece, however, did her justice, and pitied her.

On pp. 255-256, we read:

By Mrs. Hurst and Miss Bingley, they were noticed only by a curtsey; and on their being seated, a pause, awkward as such pauses must always be, succeeded for a few moments. It was first broken by Mrs. Annesley, a genteel, agreeable looking woman, whose endeavour to introduce some kind of discourse proved her to be more truly well bred than either of the others; and between her and Mrs.

Gardiner, with occasional help from Elizabeth, the conversation was carried on. Miss Darcy looked as if she wished for courage enough to join in it; and sometimes did venture a short sentence, when there was least danger of its being heard.

On p. 256, we read:

The next variation which their visit afforded was produced by the entrance of servants with cold meat, cake, and a variety of all the finest fruits in season; but this did not take place till after many a significant look and smile from Mrs. Annesley to Miss Darcy had been given, to remind her of her post. There was now employment for the whole party; for though they could not all talk, they could all eat; and the beautiful pyramids of grapes, nectarines, and peaches soon collected them round the table.

On p. 258, we read:

Their visit did not continue long after the question and answer above-mentioned; and while Mr. Darcy was attending them to their carriage, Miss Bingley was venting her feelings in criticisms on Elizabeth's person, behaviour, and dress. But Georgiana would not join her. Her brother's recommendation was enough to ensure her favour: his judgment could not err, and he had spoken in such terms of Elizabeth as to leave Georgiana without the power of finding her otherwise than lovely and amiable. When Darcy returned to the saloon, Miss Bingley could not help repeating to him some part of what she had been saying to his sister.

Write a brief character analysis of Mrs. Annesley.

1. Mrs. Annesley observes good etiquette.

2. Mrs. Annesley takes care of Miss Darcy. (She reminds her — subtly — to order food.)

On pp. 255-256, we read:

By Mrs. Hurst and Miss Bingley, they were noticed only by a curtsey; and on their being seated, a pause, awkward as such pauses must always be, succeeded for a few moments. It was first broken by Mrs. Annesley, a genteel, agreeable-looking woman, whose endeavour to introduce some kind of discourse proved her to be more truly well bred than either of the others; and between her and Mrs. Gardiner, with occasional help from Elizabeth, the conversation was carried on. Miss Darcy looked as if she wished for courage enough to join in it; and sometimes did venture a short sentence, when there was least danger of its being heard.

On p. 256, we read:

The next variation which their visit afforded was produced by the entrance of servants with cold meat, cake, and a variety of all the finest fruits in season; but this did not take place till after many a significant look and smile from Mrs. Annesley to Miss Darcy had been given, to remind her of her post. There was now employment for the whole party; for though they could not all talk, they could all eat; and the beautiful pyramids of grapes, nectarines, and peaches soon collected them round the table.

Write a brief character analysis of Miss Bingley, based on what you learn in this chapter. What happens in the conversation between Miss Bingley and Mr. Darcy?

Miss Bingley does not treat Elizabeth kindly. She greets her with only a curtsey, and a pause (a period of silence) arises between them.

Miss Bingley is jealous of Elizabeth.

Miss Bingley is still after Mr. Darcy.

Miss Bingley is angry, and she says some things that she should not in an attempt to remind Mr. Darcy of Elizabeth's supposed affection for Mr. Wickham and the real affection of Lydia and Kitty for soldiers. This indirect reference to Mr. Wickham of course makes Georgiana uncomfortable.

Miss Bingley criticizes Elizabeth's looks to Miss Darcy, who will not join in the criticism, and to Mr. Darcy, who tells her that he finds Elizabeth one of the handsomest women he knows.

On. p. 255, we read:

By Mrs. Hurst and Miss Bingley, they were noticed only by a curtsey; and on their being seated, a pause, awkward as such pauses must always be, succeeded for a few moments.

On. p. 257, we read:

[...] In no countenance was attentive curiosity so strongly marked as in Miss Bingley's, in spite of the smiles which overspread her face whenever she spoke to one of its objects; for jealousy had not yet made her desperate, and her attentions to Mr. Darcy were by no means over. Miss Darcy, on her brother's entrance, exerted herself much more to talk; and Elizabeth saw that he was anxious for his sister and herself to get acquainted, and forwarded, as much as possible, every attempt at conversation on either side. Miss Bingley saw all this likewise; and, in the imprudence of anger, took the first opportunity of saying, with sneering civility,

“Pray, Miss Eliza, are not the — — shire militia removed from Meryton? They must be a great loss to *your* family.”

On p. 259, we read:

“I remember, when we first knew her in Hertfordshire, how amazed we all were to find that she was a reputed beauty; and I particularly recollect your saying one night, after they had been dining at Netherfield, “*She* a beauty! I should as soon call her mother a wit.” But afterwards she seemed to improve on you, and I believe you thought her rather pretty at one time.”

“Yes,” replied Darcy, who could contain himself no longer, “but *that* was only when I first knew her, for it is many months since I have considered her as one of the handsomest women of my acquaintance.”

He then went away, and Miss Bingley was left to all the satisfaction of having forced him to say what gave no one any pain but herself.

Here is some information about “Not a syllable ...”

A Note on “Not a syllable...”

This paragraph in Chapter 45 (Volume 3, Chapter 3), during the visit to Pemberley, after Miss Bingley’s snide remark about the militia being removed from Meryton, does in fact mean that Darcy had hoped that his sister would marry Bingley; here’s a version of the paragraph with annotations supplied by Arnessa [pp. 257-258]:

“Had Miss Bingley known what pain she was then giving her beloved friend [Miss Darcy], she [Miss Bingley] undoubtedly would have refrained from the

hint; but she had merely intended to discompose Elizabeth, by bringing forward the idea of a man [Wickham] to whom she [Miss Bingley] believed her [Elizabeth] partial, to make her betray a sensibility which might injure her in Darcy's opinion, and perhaps to remind the latter [Darcy] of all the follies and absurdities by which some part of her [Elizabeth's] family were connected with that corps. Not a syllable had ever reached her [Miss Bingley] of Miss Darcy's meditated elopement. To no creature had it been revealed, where secrecy was possible, except to Elizabeth; and from all Bingley's connections, her brother [Darcy] was particularly anxious to conceal it, from that very wish which Elizabeth had long ago attributed to him [Darcy], of their [the Bingleys] becoming hereafter her [Miss Darcy's] own [connections]. He [Darcy] had certainly formed such a plan, and without meaning that it should affect his [Darcy's] endeavour to separate him [Bingley] from Miss [Jane] Bennet, it is probable that it might add something to his [Darcy's] lively concern for the welfare of his friend [Bingley].”

Source: <http://www.pemberley.com/janeinfo/pptopics.html>

Chapter 46 (Volume 3, Chapter 4)

What has happened to Lydia, and how does it affect Elizabeth and the other Bennets?

Lydia has run away with Mr. Wickham, as Elizabeth finds out in two letters from Jane. (One letter had been misdirected, as Jane had addressed it “remarkably ill” (260) [“ill” means badly], due to her being upset.

At first, everyone thought that Lydia and Mr. Wickham had gone to Scotland to be married, but then they discovered that Lydia and Mr. Wickham had gone to London instead. Everyone is hoping that the two will be married, but now nearly everyone doubts that a marriage will take place.

Mr. Bennet

Mr. Bennet bore the news of Lydia’s elopement better than Mrs. Bennet and Jane, but when Mr. Bennett learned that Lydia and Mr. Wickham had not gone to Scotland, he was so shocked that he could not speak for 10 minutes. He has gone to London to look for them.

In Ch. 47, p. 277, Jane says to Elizabeth that when Lydia’s letter arrived (borne by Mr. Forster), Mr. Bennet was shocked:

“I never saw anyone so shocked. He could not speak a word for full ten minutes. My mother was taken ill immediately, and the whole house in such confusion!”

Mrs. Bennet

Mrs. Bennet stays in bed, grieving. She is worried about her daughter, and she is worried about the scandal.

Jane

Jane is now in charge of the household. Mr. Bennet is gone, and Mrs. Bennet stays in bed. Jane must attend to everything by herself, and she wishes Elizabeth and the Gardiners to return as quickly as possible: Elizabeth for the comfort, and Mr. Gardiner as a man of good sense who can keep Mr. Bennet from being so wild.

Kitty

Kitty knew through letters that Lydia was partial for Mr. Wickham, but she was bound to secrecy and said nothing. Now the family is angry at her.

• **Lydia is a minor. Can minors be married without their parents' permission?**

Scotland

In Scotland at the time, minors were able to get married without the consent of their parents. A marriage in Scotland would be recognized in England. In the Penguin edition of the novel, edited by Vivien Jones, we read this note (432):

[Lydia] has eloped to Gretna Green, the first town beyond the Scottish border. Marriage in Scotland was not subject to resident requirements as in England.

In *The Annotated Pride and Prejudice*, edited by David M. Shapard, we read that Gretna Green is (493):

the Scottish town that was the first encountered after crossing the border with England on the main road. It was where English people wishing to marry in Scotland normally went, and it built up a substantial business in such marriages.

England

Minors can also be married in England. We find out that Mr. Wickham and Lydia apparently did not go to Scotland, but instead went to London. In a letter, Jane writes (262),

Many circumstances might make it more eligible for them to be married privately in town than to pursue their first plan [...]

In the Penguin edition of the novel, edited by Vivien Jones, we read that “married privately” means (432):

by securing a bishop’s license. After ‘Hardwicke’s Marriage Act of 1753 marriages were valid only if performed with parental consent for those under the age of twenty-one, and by an ordained Anglican clergyman after the calling of banns or the purchase of a license from a bishop or his surrogate. In both cases, at least one of the couple had to be resident for at least three weeks in the parish concerned.

In *The Annotated Pride and Prejudice*, edited by David M. Shapard, we read that being “married privately in town” means being (495):

married secretly in London; this was another way of marrying without parental consent. It involved the use of the banns, which were public notices of an impending marriage announced on three successive Sundays in church. If no one stepped forward to show legal reasons for stopping the marriage, it could take place. Because of the enormous growth of population in London and other cities, and the Church of England’s failure to increase the number of churches and clergy serving this population, many urban clergy had extremely large parishes and thus far too many marriages on their hands to verify whether each couple requesting marriage really

fulfilled the legal requirements of age and residency. Furthermore, if the couple were from outside the city their families were unlikely to hear of the marriage in time to step forward and prevent it.

Why has Lydia run away with Mr. Wickham? Why has Mr. Wickham run away with Lydia?

Lydia fancies herself in love with Mr. Wickham, and she runs away with Mr. Wickham — it is supposed — in order to be married to him.

Mr. Wickham wishes to marry money, and Lydia has no money. He has run away with her in order to have sex with her. We will find out that he has gambling debts that he is unable to pay. He runs away from the debts, and he does not mind taking a minor with him to provide him with sex.

What are Lydia's options in this society if Mr. Wickham does not marry her?

We can guess from Mr. Wickham's character that when he grows tired of Lydia, he will simply cast her aside.

In this society, Lydia has few options if Mr. Wickham casts her aside.

1. She possibly could be a governess — a low-paying, low-status job. However, this is unlikely as she would have a bad reputation.
2. Or she can return to her family as an object of scandal and hope that they take her in.
3. Or she can work in a whorehouse.
4. Or she can be hidden away from society.

How does Mr. Darcy respond to the Bennet family emergency?

Mr. Darcy shows consideration to Elizabeth. Mr. Darcy arrives to visit while the Gardiners are out.

- He sees that she is upset.
- He tries to take care of her (he offers her wine).
- He has her send a servant after the Gardiners (she is not well enough to go after them by herself).
- He learns what is the matter.
- When he leaves, he takes notice to his sister that Elizabeth and the Gardiners are leaving for home right away and will not be able to visit her at Pemberley.

Elizabeth is afraid that this scandal will destroy whatever love Mr. Darcy has for her. At this time, Elizabeth knows that she could love him.

On p. 264, we read:

Darcy made no answer. He seemed scarcely to hear her, and was walking up and down the room in earnest meditation; his brow contracted, his air gloomy. Elizabeth soon observed and instantly understood it. Her power was sinking; everything *must* sink under such a proof of family weakness, such an assurance of the deepest disgrace. She should neither wonder nor condemn, but the belief of his self-conquest brought nothing consolatory to her bosom, afforded no palliation of her distress. It was, on the contrary, exactly calculated to make her understand her own wishes; and never had she so honestly felt that she could have loved him, as now, when all love must be vain.

How do the Gardiners respond to the Bennet family emergency?

Very well.

They leave immediately for Elizabeth's home, writing letters of excuses, paying the bill at the inn, and packing very quickly.

Mr. Gardiner promises to do everything he can in the emergency.

On p. 267, we read:

[...] Though Lydia had never been a favourite with them, Mr. and Mrs. Gardiner could not but be deeply affected. Not Lydia only, but all were concerned in it; and after the first exclamations of surprise and horror, Mr. Gardiner readily promised every assistance in his power. Elizabeth, though expecting no less, thanked him with tears of gratitude; and all three being actuated by one spirit, everything relating to their journey was speedily settled. They were to be off as soon as possible.

Chapter 47 (Volume 3, Chapter 5)

What are the opinions of the Gardiners and Elizabeth about whether Lydia is capable of running away with and living with Mr. Wickham without being married to him?

The Gardiners

The Gardiners think better of Lydia — and of Mr. Wickham — than Elizabeth does. They think the infamy of the deed is too great for either Lydia or Mr. Wickham to be a part of it unless marriage is the object.

Elizabeth

Elizabeth does think that Lydia is very capable of running away with Mr. Wickham and living with him although she is not married to him. Mr. Wickham is charming, and Lydia is foolish. Lydia has been idle, and she is susceptible to Mr. Wickham's charms. In addition, Elizabeth thinks that Mr. Wickham will marry only for money.

Elizabeth, of course, knows more about Lydia and Mr. Wickham than do the Gardiners.

On pp. 269-270, we read:

“It does seem, and it is most shocking indeed,” replied Elizabeth, with tears in her eyes, “that a sister’s sense of decency and virtue in such a point should admit of doubt. But, really, I know not what to say. Perhaps I am not doing her justice. But she is very young; she has never been taught to think on serious subjects; and for the last half year, nay, for a twelvemonth, she has been given up to nothing but amusement and vanity. She has been allowed to dispose of her time in the most idle and frivolous manner, and to adopt any opinions that came in her

way. Since the — — shire were first quartered in Meryton, nothing but love, flirtation, and officers have been in her head. She has been doing everything in her power, by thinking and talking on the subject, to give greater — what shall I call it? — susceptibility to her feelings, which are naturally lively enough. And we all know that Wickham has every charm of person and address that can captivate a woman.”

What are the opinions of Jane and Mr. and Mrs. Bennet about whether Lydia is capable of running away with and living with Mr. Wickham without being married to him?

Jane

Jane, of course, does not think that Lydia and Mr. Wickham can be so evil, but Jane, of course, does not willingly think evil of anyone.

Mrs. Bennet

Mrs. Bennet says that she believes that Lydia would not do such a thing if she were well looked after. She blames everyone but herself for what happened.

Mr. Bennet

Mr. Bennet is indolent, usually, but he has gone to London to look for his daughter and Mr. Wickham; therefore, he must be aware (after the fact) that Lydia is very capable of doing such a thing.

Does Mrs. Bennett act like a good parent after Lydia runs away with Mr. Wickham?

No. Mrs. Bennet becomes one more burden, staying shut away and letting Jane run the family.

She should be strong and help her family instead of becoming a burden.

What is Mary's opinion about Lydia running away with Mr. Wickham?

1. Mary's morality is threadbare.
2. Mary believes, apparently, in a double standard.
3. Mary believes that Lydia's virtue is irretrievably lost.

On pp. 274-275, we read:

In the dining-room they were soon joined by Mary and Kitty, who had been too busily engaged in their separate apartments, to make their appearance before. One came from her books, and the other from her toilette. The faces of both, however, were tolerably calm; and no change was visible in either, except that the loss of her favourite sister, or the anger which she had herself incurred in the business, had given something more of fretfulness than usual to the accents of Kitty. As for Mary, she was mistress enough of herself to whisper to Elizabeth, with a countenance of grave reflection, soon after they were seated at table,

“This is a most unfortunate affair; and will probably be much talked of. But we must stem the tide of malice, and pour into the wounded bosoms of each other the balm of sisterly consolation.”

Then, perceiving in Elizabeth no inclination of replying, she added, “Unhappy as the event must be for Lydia, we may draw from it this useful lesson: that loss of virtue in a female is irretrievable — that one false step involves her in endless ruin — that her reputation is no less brittle than it is beautiful, and

that she cannot be too much guarded in her behaviour towards the undeserving of the other sex.”

Elizabeth lifted up her eyes in amazement, but was too much oppressed to make any reply. Mary, however, continued to console herself with such kind of moral extractions from the evil before them.

What do we learn about Lydia from her note to Harriet Forster?

1. Lydia thinks she is in love with Mr. Wickham and will not be happy without him.
2. Lydia sees nothing wrong in going off secretly with Mr. Wickham because she is in love.
3. Lydia’s object is marriage. She writes about signing her name as “Lydia Wickham.”
4. Lydia is thoughtless and careless as usual. She also orders — or requests — that some darning be done on one of her gowns.

On pp. 276-277, we read:

Jane then took it from her pocket-book, and gave it to Elizabeth. These were the contents:

“MY DEAR HARRIET,

You will laugh when you know where I am gone, and I cannot help laughing myself at your surprise tomorrow morning, as soon as I am missed. I am going to Gretna Green, and if you cannot guess with who, I shall think you a simpleton, for there is but one man in the world I love, and he is an angel. I should never be happy without him, so think it no harm to be off. You need not send them word at Longbourn of my going, if you do not like it, for it

will make the surprise the greater when I write to them and sign my name Lydia Wickham. What a good joke it will be! I can hardly write for laughing. Pray make my excuses to Pratt, for not keeping my engagement and dancing with him tonight. Tell him I hope he will excuse me when he knows all, and tell him I will dance with him at the next ball we meet, with great pleasure. I shall send for my clothes when I get to Longbourn; but I wish you would tell Sally to mend a great slit in my worked muslin gown before they are packed up. Goodbye. Give my love to Colonel Forster. I hope you will drink to our good journey.

Your affectionate friend,

LYDIA BENNET.”

“Oh! thoughtless, thoughtless Lydia!” cried Elizabeth when she had finished it. “What a letter is this, to be written at such a moment. But at least it shows that *she* was serious in the object of her journey. Whatever he might afterwards persuade her to, it was not on her side a *scheme* of infamy. My poor father! How he must have felt it!”

Lydia is sixteen years old. Is she likely to know what true love is?

No, of course not, although probably every 16-year-old girl thinks she knows what true love is.

Chapter 48 (Volume 3, Chapter 6)

What is Meryton's opinion of Mr. Wickham — now and previously?

Earlier, of course, Mr. Wickham had been universally liked.

Now, of course, he is universally disliked.

Mrs. Phillips brings additional bad news of Mr. Wickham's behavior each time she arrives. This makes everyone feel worse (Mrs. Phillips is not as intelligent as Mrs. Gardiner):

1. Mr. Wickham is said to be in debt everywhere.
2. Mr. Wickham is said to have seduced many daughters of tradesmen.
3. Mr. Wickham is said to be very evil.

Chances are, the neighborhood is still wrong about Mr. Wickham. Earlier, they exaggerated his goodness. Now, they are probably exaggerating his badness. Of course, this is not to say that he is not a thoroughly bad man.

Note: We should note that Mr. Gardiner is Mrs. Bennet's brother. Often, Jane Austen refers to him as Mr. Bennet's brother — and so he is, as he is Mr. Bennet's brother-in-law.

On pp. 279-280, we read:

Mrs. Gardiner and the children were to remain in Hertfordshire a few days longer, as the former thought her presence might be serviceable to her nieces. She shared in their attendance on Mrs. Bennet, and was a great comfort to them in their hours of freedom. Their other aunt also visited them frequently, and always, as she said, with the design of cheering and heartening them up, though as she never came without reporting some fresh instance of Wickham's extravagance or irregularity, she seldom

went away without leaving them more dispirited than she found them.

All Meryton seemed striving to blacken the man, who, but three months before, had been almost an angel of light. He was declared to be in debt to every tradesman in the place, and his intrigues, all honoured with the title of seduction, had been extended into every tradesman's family. Everybody declared that he was the wickedest young man in the world; and everybody began to find out that they had always distrusted the appearance of his goodness. Elizabeth, though she did not credit above half of what was said, believed enough to make her former assurance of her sister's ruin still more certain; and even Jane, who believed still less of it, became almost hopeless, more especially as the time was now come when, if they had gone to Scotland, which she had never before entirely despaired of, they must in all probability have gained some news of them.

What is your opinion of Mr. Collins' letter?

It is very bad.

1. Mr. Collins says that he wishes to comfort Mr. Bennet and his family, but his letter is hardly comforting.
2. Mr. Collins and Charlotte know what has happened. This is hardly comforting.
3. Mr. Collins says that the source of the Bennets' unhappiness arises "from a cause which no time can remove" (281). This is hardly comforting.
4. Mr. Collins says that he wishes to comfort the Bennets, but he writes, "The death of your daughter would have been a blessing in comparison of this" (281). This is hardly comforting.

5. Mr. Collins says that Lydia's bad behavior is due to either 1) the indulgence of her parents, or 2) her own bad disposition. This is hardly comforting.

6. Mr. Collins has not hesitated to gossip about Lydia to Lady Catherine and her daughter. This is hardly comforting.

7. Mr. Collins and the people at Rosings think that Lydia's conduct will have a bad effect on the Bennet daughters, for who will want to marry them. This is hardly comforting.

8. Mr. Collins says that he is happy that he did not marry Elizabeth; otherwise, he would be allied with the Bennets and would have to share in their distress. This is hardly comforting.

9. Mr. Collins advises Mr. Bennet: "Let me advise you then, my dear Sir, to console yourself as much as possible, to throw off your unworthy child from your affection for ever, and leave her to reap the fruits of her own heinous offence" (282). This is hardly comforting.

By the way, this last piece of advice means basically to let Lydia enter a whorehouse because no or few other jobs would be to her. (She could be a governess, but I don't think she is capable of being an educator, and I doubt that a genteel family would let such a woman in their house and take care of their children.) It is difficult to believe that Mr. Collins is a clergyman.

On pp. 281-282, we read:

"MY DEAR SIR,

I feel myself called upon by our relationship, and my situation in life, to condole with you on the grievous affliction you are now suffering under, of which we were yesterday informed by a letter from Hertfordshire. Be assured, my dear Sir, that Mrs.

Collins and myself sincerely sympathise with you, and all your respectable family, in your present distress, which must be of the bitterest kind, because proceeding from a cause which no time can remove. No arguments shall be wanting on my part that can alleviate so severe a misfortune; or that may comfort you, under a circumstance that must be of all others most afflicting to a parent's mind. The death of your daughter would have been a blessing in comparison of this. And it is the more to be lamented, because there is reason to suppose, as my dear Charlotte informs me, that this licentiousness of behaviour in your daughter has proceeded from a faulty degree of indulgence, though at the same time, for the consolation of yourself and Mrs. Bennet, I am inclined to think that her own disposition must be naturally bad, or she could not be guilty of such an enormity at so early an age. Howsoever that may be, you are grievously to be pitied, in which opinion I am not only joined by Mrs. Collins, but likewise by Lady Catherine and her daughter, to whom I have related the affair. They agree with me in apprehending that this false step in one daughter will be injurious to the fortunes of all the others; for who, as Lady Catherine herself condescendingly says, will connect themselves with such a family. And this consideration leads me moreover to reflect with augmented satisfaction on a certain event of last November, for had it been otherwise, I must have been involved in all your sorrow and disgrace. Let me advise you then, my dear Sir, to console yourself as much as possible, to throw off your unworthy child from your affection for ever, and leave her to reap the fruits of her own heinous offence.

I am, dear Sir, &c. &c."

What new bad news do we learn about Mr. Wickham?

1. Mr. Wickham is a gambler (gamester).
2. Mr. Wickham owes many debts. At least 1,000 pounds will be needed to clear up his debts. He owes many tradesmen, and his gambling debts are even bigger. This is a reason for Mr. Wickham to keep his whereabouts secret.

On p. 282, we read:

Mr. Gardiner did not write again till he had received an answer from Colonel Forster; and then he had nothing of a pleasant nature to send. It was not known that Wickham had a single relation with whom he kept up any connection, and it was certain that he had no near one living. His former acquaintance had been numerous; but since he had been in the militia, it did not appear that he was on terms of particular friendship with any of them. There was no one therefore who could be pointed out as likely to give any news of him. And in the wretched state of his own finances there was a very powerful motive for secrecy, in addition to his fear of discovery by Lydia's relations, for it had just transpired that he had left gaming debts behind him, to a very considerable amount. Colonel Forster believed that more than a thousand pounds would be necessary to clear his expences at Brighton. He owed a good deal in the town, but his debts of honour were still more formidable. Mr. Gardiner did not attempt to conceal these particulars from the Longbourn family; Jane heard them with horror. "A gamester!" she cried. "This is wholly unexpected. I had not an idea of it."

Has Mr. Bennet's character changed as a result of this family crisis?

1. Probably not, although he does blame himself for what happened to Lydia.
2. Mr. Bennet is still philosophic, as seen in his blaming himself but saying that he will soon get over it.
3. Mr. Bennet is still humorous and satiric, as seen with what he threatens Kitty. (He humorously threatens to never allow her to go out into society.)
4. Mr. Bennet becomes active, but only briefly. By the end of the novel, he is back to his usual indolence.

On pp. 283-284, we read:

When Mr. Bennet arrived, he had all the appearance of his usual philosophic composure. He said as little as he had ever been in the habit of saying; made no mention of the business that had taken him away, and it was some time before his daughters had courage to speak of it.

It was not till the afternoon, when he joined them at tea, that Elizabeth ventured to introduce the subject; and then, on her briefly expressing her sorrow for what he must have endured, he replied, "Say nothing of that. Who would suffer but myself? It has been my own doing, and I ought to feel it."

"You must not be too severe upon yourself," replied Elizabeth.

"You may well warn me against such an evil. Human nature is so prone to fall into it! No, Lizzy, let me once in my life feel how much I have been to blame. I am not afraid of being overpowered by the impression. It will pass away soon enough."

With what does Mr. Bennet threaten Kitty?

He humorously threatens to never allow her to go out into society.

On p. 284, we read:

“This is a parade,” cried he, “which does one good; it gives such an elegance to misfortune! Another day I will do the same; I will sit in my library, in my night cap and powdering gown, and give as much trouble as I can, or, perhaps, I may defer it till Kitty runs away.”

“I am not going to run away, Papa,” said Kitty, fretfully; “if *I* should ever go to Brighton, I would behave better than Lydia.”

“*You* go to Brighton! I would not trust you so near it as East-Bourne, for fifty pounds! No, Kitty, I have at last learnt to be cautious, and you will feel the effects of it. No officer is ever to enter my house again, nor even to pass through the village. Balls will be absolutely prohibited, unless you stand up with one of your sisters. And you are never to stir out of doors till you can prove that you have spent ten minutes of every day in a rational manner.”

Kitty, who took all these threats in a serious light, began to cry.

“Well, well,” said he, “do not make yourself unhappy. If you are a good girl for the next ten years, I will take you to a review at the end of them.”

Note: What does Mr. Bennet mean when he refers to Kitty “stand[ing] up with one of your sisters” (284)? He simply means that she would dance at the ball with one of her sisters,

something that was not unusual when gentlemen were in short supply.

Chapter 49 (Volume 3, Chapter 7)

What does Mr. Bennet have to give to make Mr. Wickham his son-in-law? What does Mr. Bennet suspect that Mr. Gardiner has to give to make Mr. Wickham Mr. Bennet's son-in-law? (Note: To make the £ sign, use OPTION-THREE.)

Mr. Bennet has to give a little money, but not much:

- 1) After Mr. Bennet dies, Lydia is to get her share of the money that has been left to the Bennet daughters. That amounts to £50 per year.
- 2) While Mr. Bennet is alive, he has to give Mr. Wickham £100 per year.

Mr. Bennet thinks that Mr. Gardiner has given at least £10,000 to Mr. Wickham in order to make him marry Lydia.

Note: To make the £ sign, use OPTION-THREE.

On p. 287-288, we read:

“Yes, yes, they must marry. There is nothing else to be done. But there are two things that I want very much to know: one is, how much money your uncle has laid down to bring it about; and the other, how I am ever to pay him.”

“Money! My uncle!” cried Jane, “what do you mean, Sir?”

“I mean that no man in his senses would marry Lydia on so slight a temptation as one hundred a year during my life, and fifty after I am gone.”

“That is very true,” said Elizabeth; “though it had not occurred to me before. His debts to be discharged, and something still to remain! Oh! It must be my uncle's doings! Generous, good man; I am afraid he

has distressed himself. A small sum could not do all this.”

“No,” said her father, “Wickham’s a fool, if he takes her with a farthing less than ten thousand pounds. I should be sorry to think so ill of him in the very beginning of our relationship.”

Compare and contrast how Mr. and Mrs. Bennet react to the news that Lydia will marry Mr. Wickham.

Mr. Bennet

Mr. Bennet dislikes the entire business. He is persuaded that his brother-in-law has given at least £10,000 to Mr. Wickham in order to make him marry Lydia. He also knows that Mr. Wickham is a thoroughly worthless son-in-law.

Mrs. Bennet

Mrs. Bennet is delighted. Previously, she was distraught; now she is ecstatic. Both are over-reactions.

Mrs. Bennet wishes to order lots of wedding clothes, but Jane and Elizabeth persuade her to wait a day and consult Mr. Bennet before ordering them.

Mrs. Bennet does not have a problem with her brother’s paying Mr. Wickham to marry Lydia. She figures that if her brother had not had a family, she and the other Bennets would have inherited all his money anyway.

Mrs. Bennet does not mind that Lydia is so young — “she was only sixteen last June” (290) — and yet is to be married.

On p. 290, Mrs. Bennet says,

“Well,” cried her mother, “it is all very right; who should do it but her own uncle? If he had not had a family of his own, I and my children must have had all his money, you know, and it is the first time we

have ever had anything from him, except a few presents. Well! I am so happy. In a short time, I shall have a daughter married. Mrs. Wickham! How well it sounds. And she was only sixteen last June. My dear Jane, I am in such a flutter that I am sure I can't write; so I will dictate, and you write for me. We will settle with your father about the money afterwards; but the things should be ordered immediately."

Elizabeth and Jane are forced to be happy that Lydia will marry Mr. Wickham. Why? Why, in normal times, would Lydia's marriage to Mr. Wickham be deplored?

The alternative to marriage is for Lydia to lose her reputation.

In normal times, Lydia's marriage to Mr. Wickham would be deplored because

- 1) Their marriage is unlikely to be happy.
- 2) Mr. Wickham is poor.
- 3) Mr. Wickham is a poor excuse for a man. He is one of the most worthless young men in England.

On p. 288, we read:

"And they are really to be married!" cried Elizabeth, as soon as they were by themselves. "How strange this is! And for *this* we are to be thankful. That they should marry, small as is their chance of happiness, and wretched as is his character, we are forced to rejoice! Oh, Lydia!"

What would happen today if a man in his early 20s ran off with a girl of 16?

United States: He might be arrested for statutory rape. The age of consent varies from 16 to 18 in the states that make up the United States.

England: The age of consent is 16.

The age of consent in England and Wales is 16 regardless of sexual orientation or gender, as specified by the Sexual Offences Act 2003. However, if person A is over the age of 18 and is in a position of trust to person B who is under the age of 18, it is illegal for A to engage in sexual activity with B. Section 47 of the Sexual Offences Act 2003 makes it an offence to pay for or promise payment for sexual services of a person under 18 where the 'client' does not reasonably believe that person is over 18, or in any event for a person under 13.

Source:

http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Ages_of_consent_in_Europe#England_and_Wales

Date Downloaded: 30 August 2013

If a young girl and a young boy (of about the same age) have sex today, do you think that they should be encouraged to get married to save the girl's reputation?

My answer is no, but such things do happen.

Chapter 50 (Volume 3, Chapter 8)

Why didn't Mr. Bennet save money earlier in his life? Why does he now wish that he had saved money earlier in his life?

Mr. Bennet did not save money earlier because he expected to have a son who would remove the entail from Longbourn.

Mrs. Bennet, of course, would rather spend than save. She would be happy to spend more than the Bennet family income, and only Mr. Bennet's love of independence keeps her from doing so.

Mr. Bennet is naturally indolent (disinclined to work; naturally lazy — the *American Heritage Dictionary*). He would much rather read in his library than go into trade as his much richer brother-in-law (Mr. Gardiner) has done.

Mr. Bennet now wishes that he had saved money earlier so that he could use his own money to pay Mr. Wickham to marry Lydia instead of being forced to rely on the use of his brother-in-law's money.

On p. 292, we read:

Mr. Bennet had very often wished, before this period of his life, that, instead of spending his whole income, he had laid by an annual sum for the better provision of his children, and of his wife, if she survived him. He now wished it more than ever. Had he done his duty in that respect, Lydia need not have been indebted to her uncle for whatever of honour or credit could now be purchased for her. The satisfaction of prevailing on one of the most worthless young men in Great Britain to be her husband might then have rested in its proper place.

He was seriously concerned that a cause of so little advantage to anyone should be forwarded at the sole expence of his brother-in-law, and he was determined, if possible, to find out the extent of his assistance, and to discharge the obligation as soon as he could.

When first Mr. Bennet had married, economy was held to be perfectly useless; for, of course, they were to have a son. This son was to join in cutting off the entail, as soon as he should be of age, and the widow and younger children would by that means be provided for. Five daughters successively entered the world, but yet the son was to come; and Mrs. Bennet, for many years after Lydia's birth, had been certain that he would. This event had at last been despaired of, but it was then too late to be saving. Mrs. Bennet had no turn for economy, and her husband's love of independence had alone prevented their exceeding their income.

How does the neighborhood react to the news that Lydia will marry Mr. Wickham? What sort of news would the neighborhood have preferred?

The neighborhood actually would have preferred bad news.

For example, if Lydia were to “come upon the town” (be a prostitute in London) or have to be “secluded from the world in some distant farm house” (be hidden away because of pregnancy without a husband), that would be wonderful gossip.

Instead, the neighborhood reacts to news of Lydia's marriage with the thought that such a marriage can never be happy.

On p. 293, we read:

The good news quickly spread through the house; and with proportionate speed through the neighbourhood. It was borne in the latter with decent philosophy. To be sure, it would have been more for the advantage of conversation, had Miss Lydia Bennet come upon the town; or, as the happiest alternative, been secluded from the world in some distant farm house. But there was much to be talked of in marrying her; and the good-natured wishes for her well-doing, which had proceeded before from all the spiteful old ladies in Meryton, lost but little of their spirit in this change of circumstances, because with such an husband, her misery was considered certain.

How does Elizabeth imagine that Mr. Darcy is reacting to the news of the Bennet family's troubles?

Elizabeth imagines that Mr. Darcy is possibly triumphing over her and her family (as Mr. Collins did earlier). He would certainly triumph if he knew that now Elizabeth would accept a proposal of marriage from him.

On p. 295, we read:

What a triumph for him, as she often thought, could he know that the proposals which she had proudly spurned only four months ago, would now have been gladly and gratefully received! He was as generous, she doubted not, as the most generous of his sex. But while he was mortal, there must be a triumph.

Would Elizabeth accept Mr. Darcy's proposal of marriage if he were to offer to marry her now?

Yes. She would gratefully accept Mr. Darcy's proposal of marriage. She now realizes that Mr. Darcy is exactly the kind of man who would make her happy.

On pp. 295-296, we read:

She began now to comprehend that he was exactly the man who, in disposition and talents, would most suit her. His understanding and temper, though unlike her own, would have answered all her wishes. It was an union that must have been to the advantage of both; by her ease and liveliness, his mind might have been softened, his manners improved; and from his judgment, information, and knowledge of the world, she must have received benefit of greater importance.

But no such happy marriage could now teach the admiring multitude what connubial felicity really was. An union of a different tendency, and precluding the possibility of the other, was soon to be formed in their family.

Does Elizabeth think that such a renewal of the marriage proposal is likely?

No, because Mr. Darcy would not wish to be allied in marriage to such a person as Mr. Wickham. He would naturally prefer to be as far from Mr. Wickham as possible.

On p. 295, we read:

[...] Had Lydia's marriage been concluded on the most honourable terms, it was not to be supposed that Mr. Darcy would connect himself with a family where, to every other objection would now be added an alliance and relationship of the nearest kind with the man whom he so justly scorned.

What will happen to the Wickhams after their marriage?

They will go North.

Mr. Wickham will quit his former corps and go North into the regulars, where he can make a new start.

Regulars: These soldiers are properly and permanently organized; they constitute the standing army, which means that they can fight overseas.

In the Penguin edition of the novel, edited by Vivien Jones, we read this note (432):

For most of Austen's adult life (1793-1815), England was at war with post-revolutionary France. The militia were a mobile military force, established in response to the fear of invasion, that moved from place to place, largely in the south of England. They were thus distinct from the 'regulars' who had fixed camps throughout the country.

Mr. Bennet is happy with this news, but Mrs. Bennet is unhappy because she wished to show Lydia around the neighborhood.

This may be a good move. The people up north will not know the circumstances of Lydia and Wickham's marriage, so they can make a new start. If Lydia and Wickham were to stay with his former corps, Lydia may be shunned.

This is a good move for Kitty; she will be far from Lydia's bad influence.

On p. 296, Mr. Gardiner writes Mr. Bennet:

The principal purport of his letter was to inform them that Mr. Wickham had resolved on quitting the Militia.

“It was greatly my wish that he should do so,” he added, “as soon as his marriage was fixed on. And I think you will agree with me in considering a removal from that corps as highly advisable, both on

his account and my niece's. It is Mr. Wickham's intention to go into the regulars; and, among his former friends, there are still some who are able and willing to assist him in the army. He has the promise of an ensigncy in General — — 's regiment, now quartered in the North. It is an advantage to have it so far from this part of the kingdom. He promises fairly; and, I hope, among different people, where they may each have a character to preserve, they will both be more prudent.

Chapter 51 (Volume 3, Chapter 9)

What is Lydia's reaction to being married?

1. Lydia is happy to be married. She feels no shame at all at having lived with Mr. Wickham before being married to him. Her lack of shame embarrasses Elizabeth.

2. Lydia claims to take precedence over Jane now that she is married.

On p. 299-300, we read:

Elizabeth could bear it no longer. She got up, and ran out of the room; and returned no more, till she heard them passing through the hall to the dining parlour. She then joined them soon enough to see Lydia, with anxious parade, walk up to her mother's right hand, and hear her say to her eldest sister, "Ah! Jane, I take your place now, and you must go lower, because I am a married woman."

In the Bennet household (and similar households), Mrs. Bennet would enter the dining room first, followed by her daughters in order of age — Jane first, then Elizabeth, and so on. However, a married daughter, even if younger, would enter the dining room before the oldest unmarried daughter. Therefore, Lydia enters the dining room before Jane.

3. Lydia wants everyone to know that she is married.

4. Lydia is proud of her husband.

5. Lydia wants to get husbands for her sisters — although Elizabeth (and no doubt Jane) do not care for her way of getting husbands.

What are the reactions of Jane, Elizabeth, and Mr. and Mrs. Bennet to Lydia and Mr. Wickham?

Jane

Jane imagines what she would feel if she were in Lydia's place, and she feels deeply ashamed.

Elizabeth

The marriage is difficult for Elizabeth to endure. She considers Mr. Wickham to be thoroughly impudent. Elizabeth is thoroughly ashamed of Lydia.

Mr. Bennet

Mr. Bennet dislikes the marriage, and he scarcely opens his lips.

Mrs. Bennet

Mrs. Bennet is happy and proud to have a married daughter, and she welcomes Lydia and Mr. Wickham with open arms. Both she and Lydia talk a great deal.

Actually, this may be the best way of handling the situation.

Imprudent means unwise, indiscreet, and not prudent. This adjective describes Lydia.

Impudent means overly bold. This adjective describes Mr. Wickham.

What secret does Lydia reveal, and why do you suppose it is supposed to be a secret?

Lydia reveals that Mr. Darcy was at the wedding.

Having read the book before, I know that Mr. Darcy has paid money to make Mr. Wickham marry Lydia. He does this because

- 1) Mr. Darcy loves Elizabeth.
- 2) Mr. Darcy blames himself for not revealing Mr. Wickham's true character to the world.

Mr. Darcy would not want his good deed to be known because

- 1) Good deeds ought not to be revealed.
- 2) If the good deed is revealed, what happened between Miss Darcy and Mr. Darcy will be revealed.
- 3) Mr. Darcy does not want Elizabeth to feel an obligation to him.

Chapter 52 (Volume 3, Chapter 10)

What part did Mr. Darcy play in the marriage of Lydia and Mrs. Wickham?

1. Mr. Darcy tracked down Lydia and Mrs. Wickham. He was able to do so because Mr. Wickham is close to Miss Darcy's former governess.

2. Mr. Darcy was the go-between between Mr. Wickham and Mr. Gardiner. Mr. Darcy did all the negotiating, and all the bribing.

3. Mr. Darcy paid all the money to Mr. Wickham that was necessary to make him marry Lydia, with the exception of the little amount of money that Mr. Bennet had to pay. However, Mr. Darcy did negotiate to make Mr. Wickham reasonable (306). In the end, this is what Mr. Darcy did (p. 307):

A. Mr. Darcy paid Mr. Wickham's debts (at least £1,000).

B. Mr. Darcy settled £1,000 upon Lydia.

C. Mr. Darcy bought Mr. Wickham's commission.

How much did the commission cost?

Commissions for the rank of ensign officially cost between 400 or 600 pounds depending on if it was a regular infantry regiment or the more prestigious Foot Guards.

Source: <http://tinyurl.com/n75eadw>

Date Downloaded: 30 August 2013

How much is a Pride and Prejudice pound worth?

Critic Edward “Copeland estimates that a pound in Pride and Prejudice was equivalent to about 80 US dollars today.”

Source: <http://tinyurl.com/o7y5ux>

Date Downloaded: 30 August 2013

What reasons did Mr. Darcy give for his part in arranging a marriage between Lydia and Mr. Wickham, and what additional role did Mr. and Mrs. Gardiner suppose he had?

1. Mr. Darcy blames himself for not making Mr. Wickham’s real character public. If he had, he feels that no woman could have fallen in love with him.

2. Mr. Darcy knows that he is much more likely to find Mr. Wickham than Mr. Gardiner or Mr. Bennet. He knows that Mr. Wickham is close to Miss Darcy’s former governess.

Of course, Mr. and Mrs. Gardiner think that Mr. Darcy is in love with Elizabeth and that is the reason that he has been so helpful and generous in arranging a marriage between Mr. Wickham and Lydia.

Before their marriage, what were the attitudes of Mr. Wickham and of Lydia toward their being married?

Lydia

Lydia thought that a marriage would take place between Mr. Wickham and her sooner or later. When it happens did not matter to her. It could be sooner; it could be later.

Lydia was already living with Mr. Wickham. She did not want to leave him to stay with her aunt and uncle until the marriage has taken place.

On p. 305, in Mrs. Gardiner's letter to Elizabeth, we read:

[...] He [Mr. Darcy] saw Wickham, and afterwards insisted on seeing Lydia. His first object with her, he acknowledged, had been to persuade her to quit her present disgraceful situation, and return to her friends as soon as they could be prevailed on to receive her, offering his assistance, as far as it would go. But he found Lydia absolutely resolved on remaining where she was. She cared for none of her friends; she wanted no help of his; she would not hear of leaving Wickham. She was sure they should be married some time or other, and it did not much signify when.

Mr. Wickham

Mr. Wickham never intended to marry Lydia.

Mr. Wickham places the blame of Lydia's going off with him on Lydia. (Apparently, he believes in personal responsibility — for other people.)

Mr. Wickham did hope to be married, however — to someone with money. This, of course, is evidence of a sexual double standard in Jane Austen's day. A woman who had sex outside of marriage would have her reputation ruined and would not be able to make a good marriage. A man who had sex outside of marriage could still hope to make a good marriage.

On pp. 305, in Mrs. Gardiner's letter to Elizabeth, we read:

[...] Since such were her feelings, it only remained, he [Mr. Darcy] thought, to secure and expedite a marriage, which, in his very first conversation with Wickham, he easily learnt had never been his design. He confessed himself obliged to leave the regiment, on account of some debts of honour, which were very pressing; and scrupled not to lay all the ill-

consequences of Lydia's flight on her own folly alone.

What does Mrs. Gardiner mean when she writes, "Pray forgive me if I have been very presuming, or at least do not punish me so far as to exclude me from P. I shall never be quite happy till I have been all round the park. A low phaeton, with a nice little pair of ponies, would be the very thing" (308)? (Note "P." means Pemberley.)

Mrs. Gardiner thinks that Mr. Darcy is in love with Elizabeth and that they are likely to be married.

Is Mr. Wickham satisfied with the conversation that he and Elizabeth have before his departure? Why or why not? (See also the beginning of Chapter 53 [Volume 3, Chapter 11].)

In the conversation, Elizabeth lets Mr. Wickham know that she knows his real character:

1. Elizabeth says that she has talked to the Pemberley housekeeper, who said that she was afraid that Mr. Wickham had turned out wild.
2. Elizabeth says that she is aware that Mr. Darcy must have had a very good reason to go to London. (Of course, the reason was to bribe Mr. Wickham to marry Lydia.)
3. Elizabeth says that she believes that Miss Darcy has gotten over her most trying age. (Most trying because of being infatuated with Mr. Wickham.)

In addition, Elizabeth makes an offer of friendship to Mr. Wickham. This doesn't mean that they will be close friends; rather, it means that they will let each other alone.

Mr. Wickham thereafter leaves Elizabeth alone.

On p. 311, we read:

They were now almost at the door of the house, for she had walked fast to get rid of him; and unwilling, for her sister's sake, to provoke him, she only said in reply, with a good-humoured smile,

“Come, Mr. Wickham, we are brother and sister, you know. Do not let us quarrel about the past. In future, I hope we shall be always of one mind.”

She held out her hand; he kissed it with affectionate gallantry, though he hardly knew how to look, and they entered the house.

On p. 312 of Chapter 53 (Volume 3, Chapter 11), we read:

Mr. Wickham was so perfectly satisfied with this conversation that he never again distressed himself, or provoked his dear sister Elizabeth, by introducing the subject of it; and she was pleased to find that she had said enough to keep him quiet.

Chapter 53 (Volume 3, Chapter 11)

What is Mr. Bennet's opinion of his new son-in-law? What is "valuable" (312) about Mr. Wickham (and Mr. Collins)?

Mr. Bennet despises Mr. Wickham. In fact, he despises him so much that Mr. Bennet compares him to Mr. Collins.

Mr. Bennet has a satiric mind. Mr. Collins and Mr. Wickham are valuable only in that it is fun to laugh at them. Mr. Bennet can laugh at Mr. Collins for his stupidity, and he can laugh at Mr. Wickham for his being worthless.

On p. 312, we read:

"He is as fine a fellow," said Mr. Bennet, as soon as they were out of the house, "as ever I saw. He simpers, and smirks, and makes love to us all. I am prodigiously proud of him. I defy even Sir William Lucas himself to produce a more valuable son-in-law."

"Makes love to us all" means to try to make himself agreeable to the Bennets.

How does the return of Mr. Bingley to Netherfield affect Mr. and Mrs. Bennet, Jane, and Elizabeth?

Mr. Bennet

Mr. Bennet says that he does not want to wait on Mr. Bingley (that is, visit him). However, Mrs. Bennet is determined to invite him to dinner.

On p. 314, we read:

"As soon as ever Mr. Bingley comes, my dear," said Mrs. Bennet, "you will wait on him of course."

“No, no. You forced me into visiting him last year, and promised, if I went to see him, he should marry one of my daughters. But it ended in nothing, and I will not be sent on a fool’s errand again.”

His wife represented to him how absolutely necessary such an attention would be from all the neighbouring gentlemen, on his returning to Netherfield.

“’Tis an etiquette I despise,” said he. “If he wants our society, let him seek it. He knows where we live. I will not spend *my* hours in running after my neighbours every time they go away and come back again.”

“Well, all I know is, that it will be abominably rude if you do not wait on him. But, however, that shan’t prevent my asking him to dine here, I am determined. We must have Mrs. Long and the Gouldings soon. That will make thirteen with ourselves, so there will be just room at table for him.”

Mrs. Bennet

Mrs. Bennet immediately thinks of Mr. Bingley and Jane being engaged at last.

Jane

Jane turns color. (She blushes.) For months, Jane has not mentioned Mr. Bingley’s name to Elizabeth, but Elizabeth thinks that Jane is still in love with Mr. Bingley. Jane denies it, however, claiming instead that she blushed only because she knew that she would be looked at.

On p. 314, we read:

In spite of what her sister declared, and really believed to be her feelings in the expectation of his

arrival, Elizabeth could easily perceive that her spirits were affected by it. They were more disturbed, more unequal, than she had often seen them.

Elizabeth

Elizabeth is happy for Jane because she thinks that Jane is still in love with Mr. Bingley.

Elizabeth also wonders whether Mr. Bingley is coming to Netherfield on his own or Mr. Darcy gave him permission to return to Netherfield.

How does Mrs. Bennet treat Mr. Bingley and Mr. Darcy? How does Elizabeth wish that Mrs. Bennet would treat Mr. Darcy?

Basically, Mrs. Bennet treats Mr. Bingley with warmth and affection, but she is very cold toward Mr. Darcy.

Elizabeth knows what Mr. Darcy has done for the family in arranging the marriage of Lydia and Mr. Wickham, so she of course is embarrassed and wants her mother to treat Mr. Darcy much better.

Mrs. Bennet says about Mr. Darcy on p. 315:

“[...] Well, any friend of Mr. Bingley’s will always be welcome here, to be sure; but else I must say that I hate the very sight of him.”

We read on p. 316:

[...] Both sisters were uncomfortable enough. Each felt for the other, and of course for themselves; and their mother talked on, of her dislike of Mr. Darcy, and her resolution to be civil to him only as Mr. Bingley’s friend, without being heard by either of them.

We read on p. 317:

Bingley, she [Elizabeth] had likewise seen for an instant, and in that short period saw him looking both pleased and embarrassed. He was received by Mrs. Bennet with a degree of civility which made her two daughters ashamed, especially when contrasted with the cold and ceremonious politeness of her curtsy and address to his friend.

Elizabeth, particularly, who knew that her mother owed to the latter the preservation of her favourite daughter from irremediable infamy, was hurt and distressed to a most painful degree by a distinction so ill applied.

On p. 318, we read:

“It is a delightful thing, to be sure, to have a daughter well married,” continued her mother, “but at the same time, Mr. Bingley, it is very hard to have her taken such a way from me. They are gone down to Newcastle, a place quite northward, it seems, and there they are to stay I do not know how long. His regiment is there; for I suppose you have heard of his leaving the — — shire, and of his being gone into the regulars. Thank Heaven! He has *some* friends, though perhaps not so many as he deserves.”

Elizabeth, who knew this to be levelled at Mr. Darcy, was in such misery of shame, that she could hardly keep her seat. It drew from her, however, the exertion of speaking, which nothing else had so effectually done before; and she asked Bingley whether he meant to make any stay in the country at present. A few weeks, he believed.

How does Mr. Bingley’s visit affect Jane?

He very quickly finds Jane attractive and lovable again.

Obviously, there is an attraction between them.

On p. 319, we read:

Yet the misery, for which years of happiness were to offer no compensation, received soon afterwards material relief, from observing how much the beauty of her sister re-kindled the admiration of her former lover. When first he came in, he had spoken to her but little; but every five minutes seemed to be giving her more of his attention. He found her as handsome as she had been last year; as good natured, and as unaffected, though not quite so chatty. Jane was anxious that no difference should be perceived in her at all, and was really persuaded that she talked as much as ever. But her mind was so busily engaged, that she did not always know when she was silent.

How does Mr. Darcy's visit affect Elizabeth?

Elizabeth observes Mr. Darcy closely. He often looks at Jane or at the ground. He does not talk to her as he did when she visited Pemberley, and she is disappointed.

On pp. 316-317, we read:

Elizabeth said as little to either as civility would allow, and sat down again to her work, with an eagerness which it did not often command. She had ventured only one glance at Darcy. He looked serious, as usual; and, she thought, more as he had been used to look in Hertfordshire, than as she had seen him at Pemberley. But, perhaps he could not in her mother's presence be what he was before her uncle and aunt. It was a painful, but not an improbable, conjecture.

On p. 317, we read:

Darcy, after enquiring of her how Mr. and Mrs. Gardiner did, a question which she could not answer without confusion, said scarcely anything. He was not seated by her; perhaps that was the reason of his silence; but it had not been so in Derbyshire. There he had talked to her friends, when he could not to herself. But now several minutes elapsed without bringing the sound of his voice; and when occasionally, unable to resist the impulse of curiosity, she raised her eyes to his face, she as often found him looking at Jane as at herself, and frequently on no object but the ground. More thoughtfulness and less anxiety to please, than when they last met, were plainly expressed. She was disappointed, and angry with herself for being so.

“Could I expect it to be otherwise!” said she. “Yet why did he come?”

She was in no humour for conversation with anyone but himself; and to him she had hardly courage to speak.

Chapter 54 (Volume 3, Chapter 12)

How successful for Mrs. Bennet, for Mr. Bingley, and for Jane is the Bennet dinner party?

Mrs. Bennet

Mrs. Bennet considers the dinner table to be a total success. She is sure that she will have one daughter, Jane, engaged soon.

On p. 323, we read:

“Well girls,” said she, as soon as they were left to themselves, “What say you to the day? I think everything has passed off uncommonly well, I assure you. The dinner was as well dressed as any I ever saw. The venison was roasted to a turn — and everybody said they never saw so fat a haunch. The soup was fifty times better than what we had at the Lucas’ last week; and even Mr. Darcy acknowledged, that the partridges were remarkably well done; and I suppose he has two or three French cooks at least. And, my dear Jane, I never saw you look in greater beauty. Mrs. Long said so too, for I asked her whether you did not. And what do you think she said besides? “Ah! Mrs. Bennet, we shall have her at Netherfield at last.” She did indeed. I do think Mrs. Long is as good a creature as ever lived — and her nieces are very pretty behaved girls, and not at all handsome: I like them prodigiously.”

Mr. Bingley

Mr. Bingley must consider the evening a total success. He is obviously falling in love with Jane again, if he has not been in love with her all the time he has been absent from her. In fact, he even looks with alarm — but half-laughedly — at

Mr. Darcy — because he is showing so much attention to Jane.

On p. 321, we read:

Elizabeth, with a triumphant sensation, looked towards his friend. He bore it with noble indifference, and she would have imagined that Bingley had received his sanction to be happy, had she not seen his eyes likewise turned towards Mr. Darcy, with an expression of half-laughing alarm.

Jane

Jane considers the evening a success. She says that now she can speak to Mr. Bingley and not love him, but this is false, as succeeding chapters will show.

On pp. 323-324, we read:

“It has been a very agreeable day,” said Miss Bennet to Elizabeth. “The party seemed so well selected, so suitable one with the other. I hope we may often meet again.”

Elizabeth smiled.

“Lizzy, you must not do so. You must not suspect me. It mortifies me. I assure you that I have now learnt to enjoy his conversation as an agreeable and sensible young man, without having a wish beyond it. I am perfectly satisfied, from what his manners now are, that he never had any design of engaging my affection. It is only that he is blessed with greater sweetness of address, and a stronger desire of generally pleasing, than any other man.”

“You are very cruel,” said her sister, “you will not let me smile, and are provoking me to it every moment.”

“How hard it is in some cases to be believed!”

“And how impossible in others!”

“But why should you wish to persuade me that I feel more than I acknowledge?”

“That is a question which I hardly know how to answer. We all love to instruct, though we can teach only what is not worth knowing. Forgive me; and if you persist in indifference, do not make me your confidante.”

How successful is the dinner party for Mr. Darcy and for Elizabeth?

Not very successful.

Elizabeth of course is very happy for Jane, and she thinks that Jane and Mr. Bingley will soon be engaged, although Jane denies it.

As far as Mr. Darcy and Elizabeth are concerned, however, the dinner party is a miserable failure.

Elizabeth

Elizabeth does not know what to think of Mr. Darcy, and she does not have a chance to speak alone to him. She would love to thank him for what he has done for Lydia, but she is unable to say more than a few words to him — and those words are to inquire about Miss Darcy.

Elizabeth, unfortunately, is sure that a man who has been refused once will never renew a proposal.

Many obstacles occur to keep her from speaking much to Mr. Darcy. One obstacle is a young lady who talks to her and says that they want nothing to do with the men, although Elizabeth wants nothing more than to speak to Mr. Darcy.

Elizabeth is waiting for Mr. Darcy to make the first move, but obstacles arise in his way, too, as when the ladies crowd around the coffee table where Elizabeth is helping to serve.

Mr. Darcy

Mr. Darcy is forced to sit near Mrs. Bennet both during dinner and at whist. Neither experience can be pleasant for him.

Mr. Darcy seems to want to speak to Elizabeth, but no occasion arises. At dinner, he sits near Mrs. Bennet. Later, Mrs. Bennet needs another whist player and calls him to her table. He obliges, but he plays unsuccessfully, because he is always looking at Elizabeth. Elizabeth is also playing unsuccessfully, because she is often looking at Mr. Darcy. Both are thinking about the other.

What does Elizabeth think of the chances for happiness of a marriage between Mr. Bingley and Jane?

She thinks that they are excellent.

She sees that Jane and Mr. Bingley are falling in love again — if they have not been in love the entire time they have been apart — and she thinks that an engagement that will lead to their happiness is forthcoming.

On p. 321, we read:

His behaviour to her sister was such, during dinner time, as showed an admiration of her, which, though more guarded than formerly, persuaded Elizabeth, that if left wholly to himself, Jane's happiness, and his own, would be speedily secured. Though she dared not depend upon the consequence, she yet received pleasure from observing his behaviour. It gave her all the animation that her spirits could boast;

for she was in no cheerful humour. Mr. Darcy was almost as far from her as the table could divide them.

Chapter 55 (Volume 3, Chapter 13)

Do Mr. Bennet and Mr. Bingley get along?

Yes.

1. The two spend a morning shooting together.

Mr. Bingley finds that he enjoys the morning much more than he had thought he might. Mr. Bennet can be eccentric and laugh at people, but there is “nothing of presumption or folly” (327) in Mr. Bingley that he can laugh at. (Later, he is able to jest about Mr. Bingley to Jane.)

On p. 327, we read:

Bingley was punctual to his appointment; and he and Mr. Bennet spent the morning together, as had been agreed on. The latter was much more agreeable than his companion expected. There was nothing of presumption or folly in Bingley that could provoke his ridicule, or disgust him into silence; and he was more communicative, and less eccentric, than the other had ever seen him.

2. Mr. Bennet is happy that Jane and Mr. Bingley are engaged.

On p. 328-329, we read:

It was an evening of no common delight to them all; the satisfaction of Miss Bennet’s mind gave a glow of such sweet animation to her face, as made her look handsomer than ever. Kitty simpered and smiled, and hoped her turn was coming soon. Mrs. Bennet could not give her consent or speak her approbation in terms warm enough to satisfy her feelings, though she talked to Bingley of nothing else for half an hour; and when Mr. Bennet joined them at supper, his

voice and manner plainly showed how really happy he was.

What role does Mrs. Bennett play in the engagement of Mr. Bingley and Jane?

Her role is to leave Jane and Mr. Bingley alone together.

She also continually invites Mr. Bingley to dine at Longbourn and to visit there.

Mrs. Bennet is a little obvious in the way she does this, and Jane is embarrassed, but all works out in the end.

At one point, Mrs. Bennet keeps winking at Elizabeth and Kitty to leave the room. Kitty doesn't understand what she wants, and Elizabeth will not understand what she wants — because Elizabeth knows that Jane will be embarrassed by being alone with Mr. Bingley.

Finally, Mrs. Bennet leaves and tells Kitty that she wants to speak to her. A few minutes later, she returns and tells Elizabeth that she wants to speak to her. However, Elizabeth waits in a hallway until Mrs. Bennet is gone, then goes back to Jane and Mr. Bingley.

Later, everyone is supposed to be playing cards, so Elizabeth leaves to write a letter. When she returns, she finds Jane and Mr. Bingley alone together. They are engaged, and Mr. Bingley leaves to ask Mr. Bennet for permission to marry Jane.

(Mrs. Bennet has purposely broken up the card party so that Jane and Mr. Bingley could be alone.)

How do Mrs. Bennet, Mr. Bennet, Elizabeth, Jane, and Mr. Bingley each react to the engagement of Mr. Bingley and Jane?

Everyone is made happy by the engagement.

Mrs. Bennet

Of course, Mrs. Bennet is very happy that she has a daughter well married.

Mr. Bennet

Mr. Bennet is happy that Jane has become engaged to marry Mr. Bingley. Of course, being Mr. Bennet, his way of expressing that happiness is eccentric. He says (p. 329, numbers added):

1. "You are each of you so complying, that nothing will ever be resolved on;"
2. "so easy, that every servant will cheat you; and"
3. "so generous, that you will always exceed your income."

On p. 329, we read that Mr. Bennet's manner showed that the engagement had made him happy, but:

Not a word, however, passed his [Mr. Bennet's] lips in allusion to it, till their visitor took his leave for the night; but as soon as he was gone, he turned to his daughter, and said,

"Jane, I congratulate you. You will be a very happy woman."

Jane went to him instantly, kissed him, and thanked him for his goodness.

"You are a good girl;" he replied, "and I have great pleasure in thinking you will be so happily settled. I have not a doubt of your doing very well together. Your tempers are by no means unlike. You are each of you so complying, that nothing will ever be resolved on; so easy, that every servant will cheat

you; and so generous, that you will always exceed your income.”

Elizabeth

Elizabeth is convinced that Jane and Mr. Bingley will be happy together.

On p. 328, we read:

He then shut the door, and, coming up to her, claimed the good wishes and affection of a sister. Elizabeth honestly and heartily expressed her delight in the prospect of their relationship. They shook hands with great cordiality; and then, till her sister came down, she had to listen to all he had to say of his own happiness, and of Jane’s perfections; and in spite of his being a lover, Elizabeth really believed all his expectations of felicity to be rationally founded, because they had for basis the excellent understanding, and super-excellent disposition of Jane, and a general similarity of feeling and taste between her and himself.

Jane

Jane wonders why the entire world is not as happy as she is.

On pp. 327-328, we read:

Jane could have no reserves from Elizabeth, where confidence would give pleasure; and instantly embracing her, acknowledged, with the liveliest emotion, that she was the happiest creature in the world.

“’Tis too much!” she added, “by far too much. I do not deserve it. Oh! Why is not everybody as happy?”

Elizabeth's congratulations were given with a sincerity, a warmth, a delight, which words could but poorly express. Every sentence of kindness was a fresh source of happiness to Jane. But she would not allow herself to stay with her sister, or say half that remained to be said for the present.

"I must go instantly to my mother;" she cried. "I would not on any account trifle with her affectionate solicitude; or allow her to hear it from anyone but myself. He is gone to my father already. Oh! Lizzy, to know that what I have to relate will give such pleasure to all my dear family! how shall I bear so much happiness!"

Mr. Bingley

Mr. Bingley is convinced that he and Jane will be happy in their marriage.

On p. 328, we read:

He then shut the door, and, coming up to her, claimed the good wishes and affection of a sister. Elizabeth honestly and heartily expressed her delight in the prospect of their relationship. They shook hands with great cordiality; and then, till her sister came down, she had to listen to all he had to say of his own happiness, and of Jane's perfections; and in spite of his being a lover, Elizabeth really believed all his expectations of felicity to be rationally founded, because they had for basis the excellent understanding, and super-excellent disposition of Jane, and a general similarity of feeling and taste between her and himself.

Chapter 56 (Volume 3, Chapter 14)

Write a short character analysis of Lady Catherine based on what you learn in this chapter. Has Lady Catherine de Bourgh changed since last Elizabeth saw her?

Lady Catherine pays an unannounced visit to the Bennet family. She is as impertinent and obnoxious as ever. Added to that is her anger.

1. Lady Catherine is rude.

On p. 332, we read:

She entered the room with an air more than usually ungracious, made no other reply to Elizabeth's salutation than a slight inclination of the head, and sat down without saying a word. Elizabeth had mentioned her name to her mother on her ladyship's entrance, though no request of introduction had been made.

2. Lady Catherine is nosy.

On p. 333-334, we read that Lady Catherine requests that Elizabeth and she go for a walk, something that Mrs. Bennet tells Elizabeth to agree to do:

Elizabeth obeyed, and running into her own room for her parasol, attended her noble guest down stairs. As they passed through the hall, Lady Catherine opened the doors into the dining-parlour and drawing-room, and pronouncing them, after a short survey, to be decent looking rooms, walked on.

3. Lady Catherine is very willing to run Mr. Darcy's life.

She wants Mr. Darcy to marry her daughter, and she says that they have been intended for each other since their birth.

4. Lady Catherine is angry.

She has heard a report that Elizabeth and Mr. Darcy are soon to be engaged, and she wants Elizabeth to renounce all intention of ever marrying Mr. Darcy.

5. Lady Catherine threatens Elizabeth.

She says that if Elizabeth marries Mr. Darcy, then Elizabeth will be ignored by all of Mr. Darcy's relations.

Elizabeth asks Lady Catherine why she should not marry Mr. Darcy, if Mr. Darcy would ask her to marry. On p. 336, we read Lady Catherine's reply:

“Because honour, decorum, prudence, nay, interest, forbid it. Yes, Miss Bennet, interest; for do not expect to be noticed by his family or friends, if you wilfully act against the inclinations of all. You will be censured, slighted, and despised, by everyone connected with him. Your alliance will be a disgrace; your name will never even be mentioned by any of us.”

6. Lady Catherine thinks that she has treated Elizabeth well in the past.

On p. 336, we read:

[Lady Catherine:] “Obstinate, headstrong girl! I am ashamed of you! Is this your gratitude for my attentions to you last spring? Is nothing due to me on that score? Let us sit down. You are to understand, Miss Bennet, that I came here with the determined resolution of carrying my purpose; nor will I be dissuaded from it. I have not been used to submit to any person's whims. I have not been in the habit of brooking disappointment.”

7. Lady Catherine is insulting.

On p. 338, we read:

[Lady Catherine:] “Not so hasty, if you please. I have by no means done. To all the objections I have already urged, I have still another to add. I am no stranger to the particulars of your youngest sister’s infamous elopement. I know it all; that the young man’s marrying her was a patched-up business, at the expence of your father and uncles. And is *such* a girl to be my nephew’s sister? Is *her* husband, is the son of his late father’s steward, to be his brother? Heaven and earth! — of what are you thinking? Are the shades of Pemberley to be thus polluted?”

[Elizabeth:] “You can *now* have nothing farther to say,” she resentfully answered. “You have insulted me in every possible method. I must beg to return to the house.”

8. When Lady Catherine takes her leave, she continues to be rude.

On p. 339, we read:

In this manner Lady Catherine talked on, till they were at the door of the carriage, when, turning hastily round, she added, “I take no leave of you, Miss Bennet. I send no compliments to your mother. You deserve no such attention. I am most seriously displeased.”

Elizabeth made no answer; and without attempting to persuade her ladyship to return into the house, walked quietly into it herself. She heard the carriage drive away as she proceeded upstairs. Her mother impatiently met her at the door of the dressing-room, to ask why Lady Catherine would not come in again and rest herself.

What message does Lady Catherine bring to Elizabeth?

Lady Catherine does tell Mrs. Bennet that Mr. and Mrs. Collins are well, but her real message is for Elizabeth: DO NOT DEIGN TO MARRY MR. DARCY!

Mr. Darcy and Anne de Bourgh are first cousins. Can they be legally married?

Yes, they can be legally married, according to this information from <pemberley.com>:

Henry Churchyard writes that, “the brief answer is that marrying one’s first cousin has been legal in England since the 16th-century (when England basically adopted the list of prohibited marriages in the book of Leviticus in the Old Testament, following the break with the Catholic church.

Source:

<http://www.pemberley.com/pemb/adaptations/pp2/ppfaq.html>

In what way are Mr. Darcy and Anne de Bourgh engaged?

They actually are not engaged at all. They have merely been intended for each other by their mothers since birth.

On pp. 335-336, we read:

Lady Catherine hesitated for a moment, and then replied,

“The engagement between them is of a peculiar kind. From their infancy, they have been intended for each other. It was the favourite wish of *his* mother, as well as of her’s. While in their cradles, we planned the union: and now, at the moment when the wishes of both sisters would be accomplished in their marriage,

to be prevented by a young woman of inferior birth, of no importance in the world, and wholly unallied to the family! Do you pay no regard to the wishes of his friends? To his tacit engagement with Miss De Bourgh? Are you lost to every feeling of propriety and delicacy? Have you not heard me say that from his earliest hours he was destined for his cousin?"

How does Elizabeth responds to Lady Catherine's impertinence?

Elizabeth, being Elizabeth, stands up for herself.

The main thing she does is to tell Lady Catherine that she and Mr. Darcy are not engaged, but she refuses absolutely to promise never to become engaged to Mr. Darcy.

On p. 337, we read:

"Tell me once for all, are you engaged to him?"

Though Elizabeth would not, for the mere purpose of obliging Lady Catherine, have answered this question, she could not but say, after a moment's deliberation,

"I am not."

Lady Catherine seemed pleased.

"And will you promise me, never to enter into such an engagement?"

"I will make no promise of the kind."

Chapter 57 (Volume 3, Chapter 15)

How did Lady Catherine come to think that Elizabeth and Mr. Darcy were engaged?

Gossip is why Lady Catherine thinks that Mr. Darcy and Elizabeth are engaged.

One marriage is in the works — that of Jane and Mr. Bingley — and neighbors are eagerly looking for another marriage.

Jane and Elizabeth are sisters. Mr. Bingley and Mr. Darcy are friends. It is reasonable to suppose that Elizabeth and Mr. Darcy will be seeing each other more often and for longer times; therefore, neighbors speculate about a second marriage occurring soon. Speculation can soon grow into gossip that an engagement has already taken place. Of course, this news (that is, gossip) will go to Mr. and Mrs. Collins and through them to Lady Catherine.

On p. 340, we read:

The discomposure of spirits which this extraordinary visit threw Elizabeth into, could not be easily overcome; nor could she, for many hours, learn to think of it less than incessantly. Lady Catherine, it appeared, had actually taken the trouble of this journey from Rosings, for the sole purpose of breaking off her supposed engagement with Mr. Darcy. It was a rational scheme, to be sure — but from what the report of their engagement could originate, Elizabeth was at a loss to imagine; till she recollected that *his* being the intimate friend of Bingley, and *her* being the sister of Jane, was enough, at a time when the expectation of one wedding made everybody eager for another, to supply the idea. She had not herself forgotten to feel that the marriage of her sister must bring them more frequently together. And her neighbours at Lucas

lodge, therefore (for through their communication with the Collinses, the report, she concluded, had reached Lady Catherine), had only set *that* down as almost certain and immediate, which *she* had looked forward to as possible at some future time.

What does Elizabeth think is likely to be Lady Catherine's next move? How does she think Mr. Darcy will respond to that move?

Elizabeth thinks that Lady Catherine will go on to London, where she will see Mr. Darcy and make the same arguments to him that she made to her.

Elizabeth thinks that it is possible that Mr. Darcy will think Lady Catherine's arguments to be good arguments. If he does think that, then he will not return to Netherfield. Therefore, Elizabeth says that if in the next few days she hears news that Mr. Darcy has broken off his promise to return to Netherfield, then he has believed and been persuaded by Lady Catherine's arguments.

On pp. 340-341, we read:

In revolving Lady Catherine's expressions, however, she could not help feeling some uneasiness as to the possible consequence of her persisting in this interference. From what she had said of her resolution to prevent their marriage, it occurred to Elizabeth that she must meditate an application to her nephew; and how *he* might take a similar representation of the evils attached to a connection with her, she dared not pronounce. She knew not the exact degree of his affection for his aunt, or his dependence on her judgment, but it was natural to suppose that he thought much higher of her ladyship than *she* could do; and it was certain that, in enumerating the miseries of a marriage with *one*

whose immediate connections were so unequal to his own, his aunt would address him on his weakest side. With his notions of dignity, he would probably feel that the arguments, which to Elizabeth had appeared weak and ridiculous, contained much good sense and solid reasoning.

If he had been wavering before as to what he should do, which had often seemed likely, the advice and intreaty of so near a relation might settle every doubt, and determine him at once to be as happy as dignity unblemished could make him. In that case he would return no more. Lady Catherine might see him in her way through town; and his engagement to Bingley of coming again to Netherfield must give way.

“If, therefore, an excuse for not keeping his promise should come to his friend within a few days,” she added, “I shall know how to understand it. I shall then give over every expectation, every wish of his constancy. If he is satisfied with only regretting me, when he might have obtained my affections and hand, I shall soon cease to regret him at all.”

What is the content of Mr. Collins’ letter, and what does Mr. Bennet think about the letter?

Mr. Collins

1. Mr. Collins gives congratulations on Jane’s engagement to be married to Mr. Bingley.
2. Mr. Collins says that Elizabeth may soon become engaged to a very important man — Mr. Darcy, of course, although Mr. Collins does not name him.
3. Mr. Collins warns that Lady Catherine does not approve of the match, and that therefore, Elizabeth ought not to get engaged to Mr. Darcy.

4. Mr. Collins also writes about Lydia. He is shocked that the Bennets received her in their house. His idea of being a good forgiving Christian is different — I hope — from that of most people.

5. Mr. Collins says that his wife, Charlotte, is pregnant.

Mr. Bennet

Mr. Bennet, of course, thinks that there is nothing between Elizabeth and Mr. Darcy, and he is very amused by the letter and thinks that Elizabeth will also be amused by it.

However, Mr. Bennet unknowingly hurts Elizabeth by saying that Mr. Darcy has probably never looked at her.

On p. 343, we read:

[Mr. Bennet:] “*Mr. Darcy*, you see, is the man! Now, Lizzy, I think I *have* surprised you. Could he, or the Lucases, have pitched on any man within the circle of our acquaintance, whose name would have given the lie more effectually to what they related? Mr. Darcy, who never looks at any woman but to see a blemish, and who probably never looked at *you* in his life! It is admirable!”

Elizabeth tried to join in her father’s pleasantry, but could only force one most reluctant smile. Never had his wit been directed in a manner so little agreeable to her.

On pp. 343-344, we read:

“*That* is his notion of Christian forgiveness! The rest of his letter is only about his dear Charlotte’s situation, and his expectation of a young olive-branch. But, Lizzy, you look as if you did not enjoy it. You are not going to be *missish*, I hope, and pretend to be affronted at an idle report. For what do

we live, but to make sport for our neighbours, and laugh at them in our turn?"

Note: *Missish* means formal or prudish.

Note: The words "his expectation of a young olive-branch" mean that Charlotte is pregnant.

Note: Mr. Bennet says, "For what do we live, but to make sport for our neighbours, and laugh at them in our turn?" (pp. 343-344). This is an important insight into his character.

Which person is Mr. Bennet's favorite: Mr. Collins or Mr. Wickham?

It's a tough call, but when he is reading one of Mr. Collins' letters, Mr. Collins is Mr. Bennet's favorite.

Mr. Bennet of course enjoys laughing at other people.

He can laugh at Mr. Collins because of Mr. Collins' stupidity.

He can laugh at Mr. Wickham because of his impudence and hypocrisy.

On p. 344, we read:

"[...] Much as I abominate writing, I would not give up Mr. Collins's correspondence for any consideration. Nay, when I read a letter of his, I cannot help giving him the preference even over Wickham, much as I value the impudence and hypocrisy of my son-in-law. And pray, Lizzy, what said Lady Catherine about this report? Did she call to refuse her consent?"

Chapter 58 (Volume 3, Chapter 16)

How does Elizabeth come to be engaged? What role does Lady Catherine play in that engagement?

A few days after Lady Catherine's visit, Mr. Darcy arrives at Netherfield, a guest of Mr. Bingley

Elizabeth and Mr. Darcy go out walking. Jane and Mr. Bingley are with them, but they quickly let the others walk ahead so that they can be alone. Kitty is with them but she leaves them alone when they reach the Lucases so she can talk to Maria.

Elizabeth takes the active role, starting the conversation by letting Mr. Darcy know that she knows what he did for Lydia. Mr. Darcy is surprised by her knowledge, but Elizabeth explains that Lydia let the secret slip out and she [Elizabeth] then got the particulars from her aunt Mrs. Gardiner.

Mr. Darcy confesses to Elizabeth that what he did for Lydia he actually did for her (Elizabeth). He then renews his proposal of marriage in this way (346):

Elizabeth was too much embarrassed to say a word. After a short pause, her companion added, "You are too generous to trifle with me. If your feelings are still what they were last April, tell me so at once. *My* affections and wishes are unchanged, but one word from you will silence me on this subject for ever."

This time Mr. Darcy is not entirely sure of success, as he was the first time he proposed.

Of course, Elizabeth has lost her prejudice against Mr. Darcy, and she happily accepts the proposal.

Lady Catherine plays a role in their engagement. As Elizabeth had suspected, she went straight to Mr. Darcy to

get a promise that he would not marry Elizabeth. Lady Catherine related what Elizabeth had said to her. Mr. Darcy knew that if Elizabeth would never marry him, she would have said so, so he began to hope that she had changed her mind about him.

On pp. 346-347, we read:

They walked on, without knowing in what direction. There was too much to be thought, and felt, and said, for attention to any other objects. She soon learnt that they were indebted for their present good understanding to the efforts of his aunt, who *did* call on him in her return through London, and there relate her journey to Longbourn, its motive, and the substance of her conversation with Elizabeth; dwelling emphatically on every expression of the latter which, in her ladyship's apprehension, peculiarly denoted her perverseness and assurance; in the belief that such a relation must assist her endeavours to obtain that promise from her nephew which *she* had refused to give. But, unluckily for her ladyship, its effect had been exactly contrariwise.

“It taught me to hope,” said he, “as I had scarcely ever allowed myself to hope before. I knew enough of your disposition to be certain that, had you been absolutely, irrevocably decided against me, you would have acknowledged it to Lady Catherine, frankly and openly.”

How has Mr. Darcy changed since the first time he proposed to Elizabeth?

1. Mr. Darcy is much less proud.
2. Mr. Darcy is not sure that Elizabeth will accept his proposal of marriage.

3. Mr. Darcy knows that some of her relations (the Gardiners) are not silly.

4. Mr. Darcy knows that Jane loves Mr. Bingley.

Mr. Darcy is not yet able to laugh at himself. What joke does Elizabeth wish to make, but refrains from making?

Mr. Darcy basically gave his friend Mr. Bingley permission to get married. He confessed to him that he had been mistaken about Jane's affection for him. Of course, he had Elizabeth's assurance that Jane loved Mr. Bingley, but he also closely watched Jane and Mr. Bingley, discovering that the two did love each other.

Mr. Bingley of course allows himself to be led by Mr. Darcy, and Elizabeth longs to joke about this quality — that a friend so easily led is very valuable — but Mr. Darcy has not yet learned to laugh at himself and so Elizabeth wisely refrains from making that joke.

On p. 351, we read:

Elizabeth longed to observe that Mr. Bingley had been a most delightful friend; so easily guided that his worth was invaluable; but she checked herself. She remembered that he had yet to learn to be laughed at, and it was rather too early to begin. In anticipating the happiness of Bingley, which of course was to be inferior only to his own, he continued the conversation till they reached the house. In the hall they parted.

Chapter 59 (Volume 3, Chapter 17)

What is the opinion of the various Bennet family members (excepting Elizabeth) concerning Mr. Darcy before they learn of Elizabeth's engagement?

According to Elizabeth, the only one who likes Mr. Darcy is Jane. The others actively dislike him, and Elizabeth is afraid that Mr. Darcy's money and rank will not be enough to make the members of her family overcome their dislike for Mr. Darcy.

On p. 352, we read:

The evening passed quietly, unmarked by anything extraordinary. The acknowledged lovers talked and laughed, the unacknowledged were silent. Darcy was not of a disposition in which happiness overflows in mirth; and Elizabeth, agitated and confused, rather *knew* that she was happy than *felt* herself to be so; for, besides the immediate embarrassment, there were other evils before her. She anticipated what would be felt in the family when her situation became known; she was aware that no one liked him but Jane; and even feared that with the others it was a *dislike* which not all his fortune and consequence might do away.

What is Jane's response to news of Elizabeth's engagement?

Jane is absolutely incredulous.

Jane does have a good reason for being incredulous. She thinks that Elizabeth hates Mr. Darcy, but of course Elizabeth's opinion of Mr. Darcy has been changing ever since he first proposed to her.

On pp. 352-353, we read:

At night she opened her heart to Jane. Though suspicion was very far from Miss Bennet's general habits, she was absolutely incredulous here.

"You are joking, Lizzy. This cannot be — engaged to Mr. Darcy! No, no, you shall not deceive me. I know it to be impossible."

"This is a wretched beginning indeed! My sole dependence was on you; and I am sure nobody else will believe me, if you do not. Yet, indeed, I am in earnest. I speak nothing but the truth. He still loves me, and we are engaged."

Jane looked at her doubtingly. "Oh, Lizzy! It cannot be. I know how much you dislike him."

"You know nothing of the matter. *That* is all to be forgot. Perhaps I did not always love him so well as I do now. But in such cases as these, a good memory is unpardonable. This is the last time I shall ever remember it myself."

Miss Bennet still looked all amazement. Elizabeth again, and more seriously assured her of its truth.

"Good Heaven! Can it be really so! Yet now I must believe you," cried Jane. "My dear, dear Lizzy, I would — I do congratulate you — but are you certain? Forgive the question — are you quite certain that you can be happy with him?"

"There can be no doubt of that. It is settled between us already, that we are to be the happiest couple in the world. But are you pleased, Jane? Shall you like to have such a brother?"

"Very, very much. Nothing could give either Bingley or myself more delight. But we considered it, we

talked of it as impossible. And do you really love him quite well enough? Oh, Lizzy! Do anything rather than marry without affection. Are you quite sure that you feel what you ought to do?"

What is Elizabeth's joking response to Jane when she asks Elizabeth how long she has loved Mr. Darcy? What serious answer could Elizabeth make?

Elizabeth tells Jane that she began to love Mr. Darcy "from my first seeing his beautiful grounds at Pemberley" (353). In other words, she began to love Mr. Darcy after seeing how rich he has and how well he lived.

Of course, this is not a serious answer. After all, Elizabeth knew that he was rich when she refused his first offer of marriage.

A better answer is that Elizabeth's feelings for Mr. Darcy have undergone a long, slow, gradual, and radical change since she declined his first offer of marriage.

On p. 353, we read:

"My dearest sister, now *be* serious. I want to talk very seriously. Let me know everything that I am to know, without delay. Will you tell me how long you have loved him?"

"It has been coming on so gradually, that I hardly know when it began. But I believe I must date it from my first seeing his beautiful grounds at Pemberley."

Another intreaty that she would be serious, however, produced the desired effect; and she soon satisfied Jane by her solemn assurances of attachment. When convinced on that article, Miss Bennet had nothing farther to wish.

Of course, this is a humorous answer; however, an element of truth can lie in it. We can judge people by their possessions. A person can buy junk, or a person can buy beautiful things. A person can have taste, or a person can lack taste. Pemberley shows that Mr. Darcy has good taste. He is the person who orders what work is done on Pemberley, and the work he orders to be done shows his good taste and his intelligence. In addition, of course, Elizabeth knew how rich Mr. Darcy was before she saw Pemberley. If she had wanted to marry him for his money alone, she would have accepted his first marriage proposal.

What is Mr. Bennet's response to news of Elizabeth's engagement?

Mr. Bennet regards Elizabeth as his favorite daughter, and he is worried for her happiness. He thinks that Elizabeth has always disliked Mr. Darcy and that Mr. Darcy has always been proud and unpleasant. Mr. Bennet is afraid that Elizabeth is marrying Mr. Darcy for his money and his possessions. He further thinks that Elizabeth will not be happy unless she marries a man whom she can respect — indeed, unless she marries a man whom she can look up to as a superior.

Mr. Bennet made a mistake when he married, and he is afraid that Elizabeth will also make a mistake in her marriage that will lead to her being unhappy as Mr. Bennet is unhappy.

On pp. 355-356, we read:

Her father was walking about the room, looking grave and anxious. "Lizzy," said he, "what are you doing? Are you out of your senses, to be accepting this man? Have not you always hated him?"

How earnestly did she then wish that her former opinions had been more reasonable, her expressions more moderate! It would have spared her from

explanations and professions which it was exceedingly awkward to give; but they were now necessary, and she assured him, with some confusion, of her attachment to Mr. Darcy.

“Or, in other words, you are determined to have him. He is rich, to be sure, and you may have more fine clothes and fine carriages than Jane. But will they make you happy?”

“Have you any other objection,” said Elizabeth, “than your belief of my indifference?”

“None at all. We all know him to be a proud, unpleasant sort of man; but this would be nothing if you really liked him.”

“I do, I do like him,” she replied, with tears in her eyes, “I love him. Indeed he has no improper pride. He is perfectly amiable. You do not know what he really is; then pray do not pain me by speaking of him in such terms.”

“Lizzy,” said her father, “I have given him my consent. He is the kind of man, indeed, to whom I should never dare refuse anything, which he condescended to ask. I now give it to *you*, if you are resolved on having him. But let me advise you to think better of it. I know your disposition, Lizzy. I know that you could be neither happy nor respectable, unless you truly esteemed your husband; unless you looked up to him as a superior. Your lively talents would place you in the greatest danger in an unequal marriage. You could scarcely escape discredit and misery. My child, let me not have the grief of seeing *you* unable to respect your partner in life. You know not what you are about.”

Note: Mr. Bennet has good reason to be worried about Elizabeth's happiness. He is in an unhappy marriage, and he wants her to be happily married.

What is Mr. Bennet's response to the news of what Mr. Darcy has done for Lydia?

1. Astonishment.
2. Relief.

Mr. Bennet is relieved that he will not have to pay for making Mr. Wickham marry Lydia.

On pp. 356-357, we read:

To complete the favourable impression, she then told him what Mr. Darcy had voluntarily done for Lydia. He heard her with astonishment.

“This is an evening of wonders, indeed! And so, Darcy did everything: made up the match, gave the money, paid the fellow's debts, and got him his commission! So much the better. It will save me a world of trouble and economy. Had it been your uncle's doing, I must and *would* have paid him; but these violent young lovers carry everything their own way. I shall offer to pay him tomorrow; he will rant and storm about his love for you, and there will be an end of the matter.”

What is Mrs. Bennet's response to news of Elizabeth's engagement?

It takes Mrs. Bennet a few minutes to understand what Elizabeth has said to her about becoming engaged to Mr. Darcy.

Immediately, Mrs. Darcy changes her mind about Mr. Darcy. Previously, her favorite epithet for Mr. Darcy was

“disagreeable,” but now she refers to him as “charming” and “handsome” and “tall.”

Mrs. Bennet apologizes for having disliked Mr. Darcy before, and she makes his favorite dish for him. However, she is in such awe of him that she seldom speaks to him except to offer him something or to agree with his opinion about something. Actually, it is a good thing that she seldom speaks to Mr. Darcy as he is unlikely to enjoy her conversation.

Mrs. Bennet is very happy that Mr. Darcy is rich. She is entirely capable of marrying for money, in my opinion.

On p. 357, we read:

When her mother went up to her dressing-room at night, she [Elizabeth] followed her, and made the important communication. Its effect was most extraordinary; for on first hearing it, Mrs. Bennet sat quite still, and unable to utter a syllable. Nor was it under many, many minutes that she could comprehend what she heard; though not in general backward to credit what was for the advantage of her family, or that came in the shape of a lover to any of them. She began at length to recover, to fidget about in her chair, get up, sit down again, wonder, and bless herself.

“Good gracious! Lord bless me! Only think! Dear me! Mr. Darcy! Who would have thought it! And is it really true? Oh! My sweetest Lizzy! How rich and how great you will be! What pin-money, what jewels, what carriages you will have! Jane’s is nothing to it — nothing at all. I am so pleased — so happy. Such a charming man! So handsome! So tall! Oh, my dear Lizzy! Pray apologise for my having disliked him so much before. I hope he will overlook

it. Dear, dear Lizzy. A house in town! Everything that is charming! Three daughters married! Ten thousand a year! Oh, Lord! What will become of me! I shall go distracted.”

Why is Mr. Wickham perhaps the favorite son-in-law of Mr. Bennet?

Mr. Bennet values fools highly, and so he values Mr. Wickham much more highly than Mr. Bingley and Mr. Darcy.

However, although Mr. Bennet says that Mr. Wickham is perhaps his favorite son-in-law, he likes Mr. Bingley and Mr. Darcy much more than he likes Mr. Wickham.

On p. 358, we read:

Elizabeth had the satisfaction of seeing her father taking pains to get acquainted with him; and Mr. Bennet soon assured her that he was rising every hour in his esteem.

“I admire all my three sons-in-law highly,” said he. “Wickham, perhaps, is my favourite; but I think I shall like *your* husband quite as well as Jane’s.”

Chapter 60 (Volume 3, Chapter 18)

When did Mr. Darcy begin to fall in love with Elizabeth? Why did he fall in love with her?

Mr. Darcy is unable to say when he first began to fall in love with Elizabeth. He says that he was in the middle of being in love before he knew it.

Elizabeth supposes that he fell in love with her because she did not chase after him. This, of course, is only supposing.

On p. 359, we read:

Elizabeth's spirits soon rising to playfulness again, she wanted Mr. Darcy to account for his having ever fallen in love with her. "How could you begin?" said she. "I can comprehend your going on charmingly, when you had once made a beginning; but what could set you off in the first place?"

"I cannot fix on the hour, or the spot, or the look, or the words, which laid the foundation. It is too long ago. I was in the middle before I knew that I *had* begun."

On p. 359, we read:

[Elizabeth:] "[...] Now be sincere; did you admire me for my impertinence?"

[Mr. Darcy:] "For the liveliness of your mind, I did."

"You may as well call it impertinence at once. It was very little less. The fact is, that you were sick of civility, of deference, of officious attention. You were disgusted with the women who were always speaking, and looking, and thinking for *your* approbation alone. I roused, and interested you, because I was so unlike *them*. Had you not been

really amiable, you would have hated me for it; but in spite of the pains you took to disguise yourself, your feelings were always noble and just; and in your heart, you thoroughly despised the persons who so assiduously courted you. There — I have saved you the trouble of accounting for it; and really, all things considered, I begin to think it perfectly reasonable. To be sure, you knew no actual good of me — but nobody thinks of *that* when they fall in love.”

What is your opinion of the letter that Elizabeth sends to Mrs. Gardiner?

Elizabeth does an excellent job of expressing her happiness.

Elizabeth does in fact think that she will be happy with Mr. Darcy.

Elizabeth no longer has to worry that the Gardiners will not be allowed to visit Pemberley. She is perfectly free to invite them to spend Christmas with her and Mr. Darcy.

On pp. 361-362, we read:

“I would have thanked you before, my dear aunt, as I ought to have done, for your long, kind, satisfactory, detail of particulars; but to say the truth, I was too cross to write. You supposed more than really existed. But *now* suppose as much as you choose; give a loose to your fancy, indulge your imagination in every possible flight which the subject will afford, and unless you believe me actually married, you cannot greatly err. You must write again very soon, and praise him a great deal more than you did in your last. I thank you, again and again, for not going to the Lakes. How could I be so silly as to wish it! Your idea of the ponies is delightful. We will go round the Park every day. I am the happiest creature in the world. Perhaps other

people have said so before, but not one with such justice. I am happier even than Jane; she only smiles, I laugh. Mr. Darcy sends you all the love in the world that he can spare from me. You are all to come to Pemberley at Christmas. Your's, &c."

Lady Catherine loves to be useful. In what way has she been useful to Elizabeth and Mr. Darcy?

Lady Catherine has been useful in bringing Elizabeth and Mr. Darcy together. Before Lady Catherine visited him and demanded that he not marry Elizabeth, Mr. Darcy had not hoped that Elizabeth loved him and would accept a renewed marriage proposal. After she visited him, he was determined to find out whether Elizabeth loved him and would accept a renewed marriage proposal.

On p. 360, we read:

[Mr. Darcy:] "[...] Lady Catherine's unjustifiable endeavours to separate us were the means of removing all my doubts. I am not indebted for my present happiness to your eager desire of expressing your gratitude. I was not in a humour to wait for any opening of your's. My aunt's intelligence had given me hope, and I was determined at once to know everything."

[Elizabeth:] "Lady Catherine has been of infinite use, which ought to make her happy, for she loves to be of use."

What is your opinion of the letter that Mr. Bennet sends to Mr. Collins?

Mr. Bennet really gets a dig in at Mr. Collins. He accuses him of being interested only in money (and the livings that go with it). Of course, this is largely accurate.

On p. 362, we read:

“DEAR SIR,

I must trouble you once more for congratulations. Elizabeth will soon be the wife of Mr. Darcy. Console Lady Catherine as well as you can. But, if I were you, I would stand by the nephew. He has more to give.

Your’s sincerely, &c.”

How does Miss Bingley react to the news that her brother will marry Jane?

Miss Bingley writes a letter expressing happiness at the news. Jane is not deceived by the letter — she knows that Miss Bingley is not as happy as the letter expresses — but she writes a nicer letter in reply than Miss Bingley deserves.

On p. 362, we read:

Miss Bingley’s congratulations to her brother, on his approaching marriage, were all that was affectionate and insincere. She wrote even to Jane on the occasion, to express her delight, and repeat all her former professions of regard. Jane was not deceived, but she was affected; and though feeling no reliance on her, could not help writing her a much kinder answer than she knew was deserved.

How does Miss Darcy react to the news that her brother will marry Elizabeth?

Miss Darcy, on the other hand, is genuinely delighted that her brother and Elizabeth are to be married, and she writes a long letter expressing her very real happiness.

On p. 362, we read:

The joy which Miss Darcy expressed on receiving similar information was as sincere as her brother's in sending it. Four sides of paper were insufficient to contain all her delight, and all her earnest desire of being loved by her sister.

How does Charlotte (Mrs. Collins) react to the news that Elizabeth will marry Mr. Darcy?

Lady Catherine is so angry that Mr. and Mrs. Collins decide to leave for a while until Lady Catherine has cooled. Charlotte, by the way, is secretly delighted by news of the engagement of her friend Elizabeth and Mr. Darcy.

On pp. 362-363, we read:

Before any answer could arrive from Mr. Collins, or any congratulations to Elizabeth from his wife, the Longbourn family heard that the Collinses were come themselves to Lucas lodge. The reason of this sudden removal was soon evident. Lady Catherine had been rendered so exceedingly angry by the contents of her nephew's letter, that Charlotte, really rejoicing in the match, was anxious to get away till the storm was blown over. At such a moment, the arrival of her friend was a sincere pleasure to Elizabeth, though in the course of their meetings she must sometimes think the pleasure dearly bought, when she saw Mr. Darcy exposed to all the parading and obsequious civility of her husband. He bore it, however, with admirable calmness. He could even listen to Sir William Lucas, when he complimented him on carrying away the brightest jewel of the country, and expressed his hopes of their all meeting frequently at St. James's, with very decent composure. If he did shrug his shoulders, it was not till Sir William was out of sight.

Chapter 61 (Volume 3, Chapter 19)

How happy do you suppose is Elizabeth and Mr. Darcy's marriage?

Very, very happy, but with a few negatives concerning Lydia.

1. Elizabeth sometimes sends Lydia money.
2. Mr. Darcy sometimes helps Mr. Wickham in his profession, but Mr. Wickham is not allowed to visit them.
3. Miss Bingley wants to visit Pemberley, so she behaves herself.
4. Miss Darcy loves Elizabeth, but she is sometimes alarmed by how Elizabeth speaks to her brother.
5. Lady Catherine is angry for a long time, but eventually is persuaded to visit Pemberley, in spite of how Elizabeth's presence has "polluted" it.
6. The Gardiners are always welcome visitors to Pemberley.

On pp. 366-367, we read:

Pemberley was now Georgiana's home; and the attachment of the sisters was exactly what Darcy had hoped to see. They were able to love each other even as well as they intended. Georgiana had the highest opinion in the world of Elizabeth; though at first she often listened with an astonishment bordering on alarm at her lively, sportive, manner of talking to her brother. He, who had always inspired in herself a respect which almost overcame her affection, she now saw the object of open pleasantry. Her mind received knowledge which had never before fallen in her way. By Elizabeth's instructions, she began to comprehend that a woman may take liberties with her

husband which a brother will not always allow in a sister more than ten years younger than himself.

Note: Miss Darcy is 16 years old, so Mr. Darcy is more than 26 years old.

How happy do you suppose is Jane and Mr. Bingley's marriage?

Very happy, but with a few negatives concerning Lydia.

1. Jane and Mr. Bingley do not stay long at Netherfield. Not even Jane wishes to be near her sillier relatives. They move away, and they live close to Elizabeth and Mr. Darcy — within 30 miles.

On p. 364, we read:

Mr. Bingley and Jane remained at Netherfield only a twelvemonth. So near a vicinity to her mother and Meryton relations was not desirable even to *his* easy temper, or *her* affectionate heart. The darling wish of his sisters was then gratified; he bought an estate in a neighbouring county to Derbyshire, and Jane and Elizabeth, in addition to every other source of happiness, were within thirty miles of each other.

2. Lydia and Mr. Wickham sometimes visit Jane and Mr. Bingley and stay, and stay, and stay.

On p. 366, we read:

Though Darcy could never receive *him* at Pemberley, yet, for Elizabeth's sake, he assisted him farther in his profession. Lydia was occasionally a visitor there, when her husband was gone to enjoy himself in London or Bath; and with the Bingleys they both of them frequently stayed so long, that even Bingley's good humour was overcome, and he

proceeded so far as to *talk* of giving them a hint to be gone.

How happy do you suppose is Lydia and Mr. Wickham's marriage?

Not happy at all.

1. Lydia asks Elizabeth for help, but Elizabeth refuses to speak to her husband (Mr. Darcy) about helping them; however, Elizabeth does give them money (that she has saved) from time to time.

2. Lydia and Mr. Wickham spend more money than they ought to.

3. Lydia and Mr. Wickham often ask Jane or Elizabeth for help in settling debts when they move — which is often.

4. Mr. Wickham falls out of love with Lydia — if he ever was in love with her — very quickly. Lydia loves Mr. Wickham a little longer.

5. Lydia remains faithful to her husband.

6. Mr. Darcy helps Mr. Wickham a little in his profession, but Mr. Wickham never visits Pemberley. However, Lydia sometimes visits while Mr. Wickham goes elsewhere.

7. Lydia and Mr. Wickham sometimes visit Jane and Mr. Bingley and stay, and stay, and stay.

On pp. 365-366, we read:

As it happened that Elizabeth had *much* rather not [speak to Mr. Darcy about helping Mr. Wickham], she endeavoured in her answer to put an end to every intreaty and expectation of the kind. Such relief, however, as it was in her power to afford, by the practice of what might be called economy in her own private expences, she frequently sent them. It had

always been evident to her that such an income as theirs, under the direction of two persons so extravagant in their wants, and heedless of the future, must be very insufficient to their support; and whenever they changed their quarters, either Jane or herself were sure of being applied to for some little assistance towards discharging their bills. Their manner of living, even when the restoration of peace dismissed them to a home, was unsettled in the extreme. They were always moving from place to place in quest of a cheap situation, and always spending more than they ought. His affection for her soon sunk into indifference; her's lasted a little longer; and in spite of her youth and her manners, she retained all the claims to reputation which her marriage had given her.

Note: When we read that “in spite of her youth and her manners, she [Lydia] retained all the claims to reputation which her marriage had given her” (366), this means that Lydia remained faithful to Mr. Wickham.

What happens to Kitty and Mary?

Kitty

Kitty stays often with Jane or Elizabeth, and she benefits by the change, becoming much more sensible.

Kitty is kept away from Lydia.

On pp. 364-365, we read:

Kitty, to her very material advantage, spent the chief of her time with her two elder sisters. In society so superior to what she had generally known, her improvement was great. She was not of so ungovernable a temper as Lydia; and, removed from the influence of Lydia's example, she became, by

proper attention and management, less irritable, less ignorant, and less insipid. From the farther disadvantage of Lydia's society she was of course carefully kept, and though Mrs. Wickham frequently invited her to come and stay with her, with the promise of balls and young men, her father would never consent to her going.

Mary

Mary goes into society much more often. Since her plainness is now no longer contrasted with Jane's and Elizabeth's beauty (Lydia and Kitty are also prettier than Mary), Mr. Bennet suspects that Mary enjoys socializing.

On p. 365, we read:

Mary was the only daughter who remained at home; and she was necessarily drawn from the pursuit of accomplishments by Mrs. Bennet's being quite unable to sit alone. Mary was obliged to mix more with the world, but she could still moralize over every morning visit; and as she was no longer mortified by comparisons between her sisters' beauty and her own, it was suspected by her father that she submitted to the change without much reluctance.

How happy do you suppose is Mr. and Mrs. Bennet's marriage?

Not happy at all.

On p. 364, we read:

Happy for all her maternal feelings was the day on which Mrs. Bennet got rid of her two most deserving daughters. With what delighted pride she afterwards visited Mrs. Bingley, and talked of Mrs. Darcy, may

be guessed. I wish I could say, for the sake of her family, that the accomplishment of her earnest desire in the establishment of so many of her children produced so happy an effect as to make her a sensible, amiable, well-informed woman for the rest of her life; though perhaps it was lucky for her husband, who might not have relished domestic felicity in so unusual a form, that she still was occasionally nervous and invariably silly.

Mr. Bennet missed his second daughter exceedingly; his affection for her drew him oftener from home than anything else could do. He delighted in going to Pemberley, especially when he was least expected.

Note: It is interesting that suddenly we have first-person narration here: “I wish I could say [...]” (364). In the rest of the novel, the narration is third-person.

How happy do you suppose is Charlotte and Mr. Collins’ marriage?

We have seen that this marriage is not all it could be. However, both Mr. and Mrs. Collins seem satisfied with their marriage. Neither is able to feel love deeply, but they are satisfied with their marriage.

Which couple in *Pride and Prejudice*, in your opinion, have the worst marriage?

My opinion is that Lydia and Mr. Wickham have the worst marriage.

Second worse is probably Mr. and Mrs. Bennet. Mrs. Bennet is mostly satisfied with the marriage, I think.

Third worst is probably Charlotte and Mr. Collins. However, both Mr. and Mrs. Collins are satisfied with the marriage.

Which couple in *Pride and Prejudice*, in your opinion, have the best marriage?

Probably the happiest marriage is that of Elizabeth and Mr. Darcy.

Second happiest is that of Jane and Mr. Bingley.

Neither Elizabeth nor Jane married for money, but they end up with money. These are the two Bennet daughters who married for love. They marry men whom they can respect and love.

Appendix A: Bibliography

Austen, Jane. *Pride and Prejudice*. London: Penguin Classics, 2003. Edited with an introduction and notes by Vivien Jones.

Austen, Jane. *The Annotated Pride and Prejudice*. Delmar, NY: Pheasant Book, 2004. Annotated and Edited, with an Introduction by David M. Shapard.

The Republic of Pemberley. An excellent Web site about Jane Austen and her novels. <<http://www.pemberley.com/>>.

Appendix B: Paper Topics

- Analyze the letters in *Pride and Prejudice*. What do they reveal about the characters who wrote them?
- Is *Pride and Prejudice* a feminist novel?
- How does Jane Austen criticize society in *Pride and Prejudice*?
- Write about the theme of gossip in *Pride and Prejudice*.
- Compare and contrast two or more marriages in *Pride and Prejudice*.
- Analyze some of the marriages in *Pride and Prejudice* to determine what are the characteristics of good marriages and what are the characteristics of bad marriages.
- According to *Pride and Prejudice*, ought one to marry for money or for love?
- Compare and contrast Elizabeth and Mr. Darcy.
- Compare and contrast two or more important characters in *Pride and Prejudice*.
- Write character analyses of any two Bennett daughters.
- Write character analyses of the five Bennet daughters.
- Are Mr. and Mrs. Bennet good parents?
- According to this novel, how important are intelligence and competence in living a good life?

Appendix C: Paper Hints

• **Analyze the letters in *Pride and Prejudice*. What do they reveal about the characters who wrote them?**

Certainly, Mr. Collins' letters are very revealing of his character.

So is Mr. Bennet's short letter.

So is Miss Bingley's short letter to Jane.

Elizabeth and Mrs. Gardiner also write letters.

And, of course, Mr. Darcy's letter to Elizabeth is very important.

• **Is *Pride and Prejudice* a feminist novel?**

You can argue either way here.

Certainly Jane Austen criticizes her society. This society can lead people to make bad marriages (Charlotte).

Jane Austen's society is sexist.

• **How does Jane Austen criticize society in *Pride and Prejudice*?**

Many, many fools exist in this society.

One can be gentleman-like without being a gentleman. (Mr. Gardiner.)

Sir William Lucas is filled with pride, so he gives up business.

Many people want to marry for money, including Mr. Wickham.

Society has an over-concern for money.

This society can lead people to make bad marriages (Charlotte).

Younger sons don't get much money (Fitzwilliam).

The Bennets are forced to be happy that Lydia has married a worthless young man because otherwise her reputation would be ruined.

Lots and lots of gossip.

Many people are overly concerned with social status and money.

Good women are expected to make prudent marriages — prudent as far as money is concerned.

• **Write about the theme of gossip in *Pride and Prejudice*.**

Gossip plays a big role in *Pride and Prejudice*.

Lady Catherine hears gossip about Mr. Darcy and Elizabeth being engaged, and that sets in motion their eventual engagement.

The gossipers tend to be silly characters (Mrs. Bennet, Lydia, Kitty, Mr. Collins, Lady Catherine).

The gossip is often wrong. The gossipers are wrong about Mr. Darcy and about Mr. Wickham.

Mr. Wickham spreads bad (and untruthful) gossip about Mr. Darcy.

Gossip changes. At first everyone likes Mr. Wickham and then everyone hates Mr. Wickham.

Gossip ruins lives. Lots of gossip will follow Lydia around if she does not marry Mr. Wickham (and some gossip will follow her around even if she does).

The characters have to beware of the servants, as the servants spread gossip. (At Lydia's luncheon for Elizabeth and Jane, Elizabeth and Jane tell the servant that he need not wait because they are afraid that Lydia will say something revealing.)

Mrs. Phillips learns about Jane's removal from Netherfield Park from gossip.

Mr. Collins, a silly character, gossips quite a lot.

Compare and contrast two or more marriages in *Pride and Prejudice*.

Good Marriages

- The Gardiners
- Elizabeth and Mr. Darcy
- Jane and Mr. Bingley

Bad Marriages

- The Bennets
 - Lydia and Mr. Wickham
 - The Collinses
- Analyze some of the marriages in *Pride and Prejudice* to determine what are the characteristics of good marriages and what are the characteristics of bad marriages.**

Here is an outline you can use:

I. Introduction

A. Thesis Statement/Forecasting Statement

II. Bad Marriage #1

III. Bad Marriage #2

IV. Bad Marriage #3

V. Characteristics of Bad Marriages

VI. Good Marriage #1

VII. Other Good Marriages

VIII. Characteristics of Good Marriages

VI. Conclusion

You can also come up with several characteristics of good marriages, then write about whether certain marriages have or lack that characteristic.

Bad Marriages

The Bennets

Mr. Bennet married young, thinking that he was in love because Mrs. Bennet was young and lively.

Mr. Bennet can barely keep Mrs. Bennet from overspending and sending the family into debt. (Ex: Brighton.)

Mr. Bennet makes fun of his wife and children, as well as of fools such as Mr. Collins and Mrs. Wickham.

The Bennets are not good parents.

Lydia and Mr. Wickham

This is a marriage that is imprudent as to fortune and to character.

There is a kind of poetic justice here. Two bad characters end up married to each other.

The Hursts

Neither of these people is good.

Mr. Hurst is a fool who merely looks the gentleman. He can talk of food and likes to play cards. That is all.

Mrs. Hurst is rude like her sister, Miss Bingley.

The Collinses

Mr. Collins is a fool.

Charlotte manages her husband. She encourages him to work as much as possible in the garden.

Charlotte has chosen as her sitting room a room that is not as comfortable as a room that is closer to Mr. Collins' study. That way, she will not see him as much.

When Mr. Collins says something foolish, which is not infrequent, Charlotte wisely does not hear him.

Mr. Collins' letters reveal how foolish he is.

Good Marriages

Jane and Mr. Bingley

The Gardiners

Elizabeth and Mr. Darcy

Characteristics of Good Marriages

Both partners respect each other.

Both partners are good at money management. This simply means that they don't waste money.

A prudent marriage is one in which the couple will have enough money to live on.

• **According to *Pride and Prejudice*, ought one to marry for money or for love?**

For love.

However, money is important. One ought to marry prudently. One ought to marry someone with enough money that one can remain genteel.

Intelligence and competence are also important in having a good, happy marriage.

Compare and contrast Elizabeth and Mr. Darcy.

- Elizabeth is prejudiced.
- Mr. Darcy is proud.
- Both of them learn from each other. Elizabeth learns that first impressions are sometimes mistaken, and Mr. Darcy learns not to act so proud.
- Both of them change during the novel.
- **Compare and contrast two or more important characters in *Pride and Prejudice*.**

A paper on Mr. Wickham and Mr. Collins would be interesting. Both are fools, but they are fools in different ways.

A paper on Mr. Bennet and Sir William Lucas would be interesting.

A paper on Charlotte and Elizabeth would be interesting.

- **Write character analyses of any two Bennett daughters.**

The obvious choices are Elizabeth and Jane.

- **Write character analyses of the five Bennet daughters.**

Jane

Jane is the oldest and the most beautiful Bennet daughter.

Jane is kindly disposed toward everyone. She always wants to believe the best about everyone.

Elizabeth

Elizabeth is the second oldest Bennet daughter. She is also probably the liveliest and the most intelligent.

Elizabeth is the favorite of her father.

Elizabeth changes over the course of the novel. She learns not to be so prejudiced by first impressions. She also learns to love Mr. Darcy.

Mary

Mary is the middle daughter.

Mary is plain, so she strives for accomplishments.

At the end of the novel, when she starts going out more, she doesn't mind because she is no longer embarrassed by having her beauty compared to that of Jane and Elizabeth. (Being married and living up north, Jane and Elizabeth are no longer around.)

Kitty

Kitty is older than Lydia, but Lydia is the more dominant of the two.

Like Lydia, Kitty is empty-headed and gossipy, but she improves once she is removed from Lydia's company.

Lydia

Lydia is the youngest and the tallest. She is empty-headed and gossipy, and she marries Mr. Wickham, one of the most worthless young men in England.

• **Write a character analysis of one character.**

Mr. Collins would be a good character to write about.

So would Lady Catherine.

Mr. Bennet is one of my favorite characters.

• **Are Mr. and Mrs. Bennet good parents?**

No.

Mr. Bennet makes fun of his wife and children.

They fail to properly supervise Lydia and Kitty, and they let Lydia go off to Brighton with Mrs. Forster.

Mrs. Bennet is empty-headed and gossipy and sometimes fretful.

Appendix D: Short Reaction Memos

The questions in this discussion guide to Jane Austen's *Pride and Prejudice* can be used in discussions; however, they can also be used for short reaction memos. For example, I do this at Ohio University. See below for the assignment and sample short reaction memos.

How Do I Complete the Reaction Memo Assignments?

During the quarter, you will have to write a series of short memos in which you write about the readings you have been assigned.

Each memo should be at least 250 words, not counting long quotations from the work of literature. Include a word count for each memo, although that is not normally part of the memo format.

Following the memo heading (To, From, Re, Date, Words), write the question you are answering and the part of the book that the question applies to.

You may answer one question or more than one question. I will supply you with a list of questions that you may answer

Note that a Works Cited list is needed if you use quotations.

For examples from my Great Books courses at Ohio University in Athens, Ohio, see the following pages.

To: David Bruce

From: Jane Student

Re: *Odyssey*, Book 12 Reaction Memo

Date: Put Today's Date Here

Words: 323

***Odyssey*, Book 12: Is Odysseus a bad leader?**

This is an important question in the *Odyssey*. After all, Odysseus leads 12 ships and many men to Troy, but the ships are all destroyed and all of his men die and he returns home to Ithaca alone. Who is responsible for the deaths of Odysseus' men? Is Odysseus responsible for their deaths, or do the men bear some responsibility for their own deaths? Many readers prefer Odysseus, the great individualist, to Aeneas, the man who founds the Roman people, but then they realize that all of Odysseus' men died, while Aeneas succeeded in bringing many Trojans to Italy. When readers think of that, they begin to have a greater respect for Aeneas.

From the beginning of the *Odyssey*, this has been an issue. The bard says that the men perished because of the "recklessness of their own ways" (1.8). However, we notice that Odysseus is asleep at odd times. In Book 10, Aeolus gives Odysseus a bag in which the contrary winds have been tied up. This allows Odysseus to sail to Ithaca safely. However, they reach the island and see smoke rising from the fires, Odysseus goes to sleep and his men open the bag, letting the contrary winds escape, and the ship is blown back to King Aeolus' island. Similarly, in Book 12, on the island of the Sun-god, Odysseus is asleep when his men sacrifice the Sun-god's cattle.

It does seem that Odysseus does not bear the blame for his men's death. In many cases, they do perish through their own

stupidity. In other cases, of course, they die during war or during adventures, but in those times, Odysseus was with them, and he could have died, too.

One other thing to think about is that Odysseus is telling his own story. Could he be lying? After all, some of the adventures he relates are pretty incredible. (Probably not. The gods vouch for some of what he says.)

Works Cited

Homer. *The Odyssey*. Trans. Robert Fagles. New York: Penguin Books, 1996. Print.

To: David Bruce

From: Jane Student

Re: *Inferno*, Canto 1 Reaction Memo

Date: Put Today's Date Here

Words: 263

***Inferno*, Canto 1**

• What do you need to be a member of the Afterlife in Dante's *Inferno*?

To be a member of the afterlife in Hell, you must meet a number of criteria:

- 1) You must be dead.
- 2) You must be an unrepentant sinner.
- 3) You must be a dead, unrepentant sinner by 1300.

Of course, only dead people — with a few exceptions such as Dante the Pilgrim — can be found in the *Inferno*.

Only unrepentant sinners can be found in the *Inferno*. Everyone has sinned, but sinners who repented their sins are found in Purgatory or Paradise, not in the *Inferno*.

Dante set his *Divine Comedy* in 1300, so the characters who appear in it are dead in 1300.

***Inferno*, Canto 1**

• What does it mean to repent?

A sinner who repents regrets having committed the sin. The repentant sinner vows not to commit the sin again, and he or she does his or her best not to commit the sin again.

Inferno, Canto 1**• What is the geography of Hell? In *The Divine Comedy*, where is Hell located?**

Hell is located straight down. We will find out later that when Lucifer was thrown out of Paradise, he fell to the Earth, ending up at the center of the Earth. The center of the Earth is the lowest part of Hell. Lucifer created the Mountain of Purgatory when he hit the Earth.

To: David Bruce

From: Jane Student

Re: *Candide*, Ch. 26-30

Date: Today's Date

Words: 368

Ch. 30: Write a brief character analysis of the old man and his family.

When Candide and his friends meet the old man, the old man is “sitting in front of his door beneath an arbor of orange trees, enjoying the fresh air” (119). The old man basically ignores politics that he cannot influence. Some people have recently been killed in Constantinople, and the old man does not even know their names. However, the old man does enjoy some material things, including good food, and he enjoys hospitality.

The old man invites Candide and his friends to enjoy some refreshments inside his house. They are served with “several kinds of fruit-favored drinks” and “boiled cream with pieces of candied citron in it, oranges, lemons, limes, pineapples, pistachio nuts, and mocha coffee” (119). The old man and his family have an abundance of food, but although Candide wonders if the old man has an enormous farm, the old man tells him, “I have only twenty acres of land, which my children and I cultivate. Our work keeps us free of three great evils: boredom, vice, and poverty” (119).

From this brief encounter, we learn several things:

- The old man and his family are content — even happy.
- The old man and his family ignore the wars and murders and crimes that happen elsewhere.

- The old man and his family have enough. They work hard on their little farm, and they have plenty of food and good things to eat.
- The old man and his family have only 20 acres, but 20 acres are enough.

Candide and his friends decide to emulate the old man and his family. Each of them begins to work hard on their little farm. Cunegonde learns to make pastry, Paquette begins to embroider, and the old woman does the laundry and repairs the linen. Brother Giroflée becomes a carpenter, and Candide and the others grow “abundant crops” (120). At the end of the short novel, the group of friends seem to have come the closest they can to happiness in a world filled with evil, but it does take an effort on their part. As Candide says in the short novel’s last words, “... we must cultivate our garden” (120).

Works Cited

Voltaire. *Candide*. Trans. Lowell Bair. New York: Bantam Books, 1981. Print.

To: David Bruce

From: Jane Student

Re: *A Connecticut Yankee in King Arthur's Court*, Ch. 1-4 Reaction Memo

Date: Put Today's Date Here

Words: 286

CH. 3: "KNIGHTS OF THE TABLE ROUND"

• What hints do we have of the relationship between Queen Guenever and Sir Launcelot?

Some hanky-panky is going on between Sir Launcelot and King Arthur's wife, Queen Guenever. Some six or eight prisoners address her, and they tell her that Sir Kay the Seneschal has captured them. Immediately, everybody present feels surprise and astonishment. The queen looks disappointed because she had hoped that Sir Launcelot captured the prisoners.

As it turns out, they were. Sir Launcelot first rescued Sir Kay from some attackers, then he took Sir Kay's armor and horse and captured more knights. All of these prisoners were actually captured by Sir Launcelot, not by Sir Kay at all.

Two passages let us know that something is going on between Sir Launcelot and Queen Guenever:

1. The first is subtle; she looks disappointed when Sir Kay says that he captured the knights: "Surprise and astonishment flashed from face to face all over the house; the queen's gratified smile faded out at the name of Sir Kay, and she looked disappointed ..." (503).
2. The other is much more overt and occurs after Guenever learns that the knight who really captured the prisoners was Sir Launcelot: "Well, it was touching to see the queen blush

and smile, and look embarrassed and happy, and fling furtive glances at Sir Launcelot that would have got him shot in Arkansas, to a dead certainty” (503).

Works Cited

Twain, Mark. *Four Complete Novels*. New York: Gramercy Books, 1982. Print.

Appendix E: About the Author

It was a dark and stormy night. Suddenly a cry rang out, and on a hot summer night in 1954, Josephine, wife of Carl Bruce, gave birth to a boy — me. Unfortunately, this young married couple allowed Reuben Saturday, Josephine’s brother, to name their first-born. Reuben, aka “The Joker,” decided that Bruce was a nice name, so he decided to name me Bruce Bruce. I have gone by my middle name — David — ever since.

Being named Bruce David Bruce hasn’t been all bad. Bank tellers remember me very quickly, so I don’t often have to show an ID. It can be fun in charades, also. When I was a counselor as a teenager at Camp Echoing Hills in Warsaw, Ohio, a fellow counselor gave the signs for “sounds like” and “two words,” then she pointed to a bruise on her leg twice. Bruise Bruise? Oh yeah, Bruce Bruce is the answer!

Uncle Reuben, by the way, gave me a haircut when I was in kindergarten. He cut my hair short and shaved a small bald spot on the back of my head. My mother wouldn’t let me go to school until the bald spot grew out again.

Of all my brothers and sisters (six in all), I am the only transplant to Athens, Ohio. I was born in Newark, Ohio, and have lived all around Southeastern Ohio. However, I moved to Athens to go to Ohio University and have never left.

At Ohio U, I never could make up my mind whether to major in English or Philosophy, so I got a bachelor’s degree with a double major in both areas, then I added a Master of Arts degree in English and a Master of Arts degree in Philosophy. Yes, I have my MAMA degree.

Currently, and for a long time to come (I eat fruits and veggies), I am spending my retirement writing books such as *Nadia Comaneci: Perfect 10*, *The Funniest People in Dance*, *Homer’s Iliad: A Retelling in Prose*, and *William Shakespeare’s Othello: A Retelling in Prose*.

By the way, my sister Brenda Kennedy writes romances such as *A New Beginning* and *Shattered Dreams*.

Appendix F: Some Books by David Bruce

Discussion Guides Series

Dante's Inferno: A Discussion Guide

Dante's Paradise: A Discussion Guide

Dante's Purgatory: A Discussion Guide

Forrest Carter's The Education of Little Tree: A Discussion Guide

Homer's Iliad: A Discussion Guide

Homer's Odyssey: A Discussion Guide

Jane Austen's Pride and Prejudice: A Discussion Guide

Jerry Spinelli's Maniac Magee: A Discussion Guide

Jerry Spinelli's Stargirl: A Discussion Guide

Jonathan Swift's "A Modest Proposal": A Discussion Guide

Lloyd Alexander's The Black Cauldron: A Discussion Guide

Lloyd Alexander's The Book of Three: A Discussion Guide

Mark Twain's Adventures of Huckleberry Finn: A Discussion Guide

Mark Twain's The Adventures of Tom Sawyer: A Discussion Guide

Mark Twain's A Connecticut Yankee in King Arthur's Court: A Discussion Guide

Mark Twain's The Prince and the Pauper: A Discussion Guide

Nancy Garden's Annie on My Mind: A Discussion Guide

Nicholas Sparks' A Walk to Remember: A Discussion Guide

Virgil's Aeneid: A Discussion Guide

Virgil's "The Fall of Troy": A Discussion Guide

Voltaire's Candide: A Discussion Guide

William Shakespeare's 1 Henry IV: A Discussion Guide

William Shakespeare's Macbeth: A Discussion Guide

William Shakespeare's A Midsummer Night's Dream: A Discussion Guide

William Shakespeare's Romeo and Juliet: A Discussion Guide

William Sleator's Oddballs: A Discussion Guide

(*Oddballs* is an excellent source for teaching how to write autobiographical essays/personal narratives.)

Retellings of a Classic Work of Literature

Ben Jonson's The Alchemist: A Retelling

Ben Jonson's Bartholomew Fair: A Retelling

Ben Jonson's The Case is Altered: A Retelling

Ben Jonson's Catiline's Conspiracy: A Retelling

Ben Jonson's The Devil is an Ass: A Retelling

Ben Jonson's Epicene: A Retelling

Ben Jonson's Every Man in His Humor: A Retelling

Ben Jonson's The New Inn: A Retelling

Ben Jonson's The Staple of News: A Retelling

Ben Jonson's Volpone, or the Fox: A Retelling

Christopher Marlowe's Complete Plays: Retellings

Christopher Marlowe's Dido, Queen of Carthage: A Retelling

Christopher Marlowe's Doctor Faustus: Retellings of the 1604 A-Text and of the 1616 B-Text

Christopher Marlowe's Edward II: A Retelling

Christopher Marlowe's The Massacre at Paris: A Retelling

Christopher Marlowe's The Rich Jew of Malta: A Retelling

Christopher Marlowe's Tamburlaine, Parts 1 and 2: Retellings

Dante's Divine Comedy: A Retelling in Prose

Dante's Inferno: A Retelling in Prose

Dante's Purgatory: A Retelling in Prose

Dante's Paradise: A Retelling in Prose

The Famous Victories of Henry V: A Retelling

From the Iliad to the Odyssey: A Retelling in Prose of Quintus of Smyrna's Posthomerica

George Peele: Five Plays Retold in Modern English

George Peele's The Arraignment of Paris: A Retelling

George Peele's The Battle of Alcazar: A Retelling

George's Peele's David and Bathsheba, and the Tragedy of Absalom: A Retelling

George Peele's Edward I: A Retelling

George Peele's The Old Wives' Tale: A Retelling

George-A-Greene, The Pinner of Wakefield: A Retelling

The History of King Leir: A Retelling

Homer's Iliad: A Retelling in Prose

Homer's Odyssey: A Retelling in Prose

Jason and the Argonauts: A Retelling in Prose of Apollonius of Rhodes' Argonautica

The Jests of George Peele: A Retelling

John Ford: Eight Plays Translated into Modern English

John Ford's The Broken Heart: A Retelling

John Ford's The Fancies, Chaste and Noble: A Retelling

John Ford's The Lady's Trial: A Retelling

John Ford's The Lover's Melancholy: A Retelling

John Ford's Love's Sacrifice: A Retelling

John Ford's Perkin Warbeck: A Retelling

John Ford's The Queen: A Retelling

John Ford's 'Tis Pity She's a Whore: A Retelling

John Webster's The White Devil: A Retelling

King Edward III: A Retelling

The Merry Devil of Edmonton: A Retelling

Robert Greene's Friar Bacon and Friar Bungay: A Retelling

The Taming of a Shrew: A Retelling

Tarlton's Jests: A Retelling

The Trojan War and Its Aftermath: Four Ancient Epic Poems

Virgil's Aeneid: A Retelling in Prose

William Shakespeare's 5 Late Romances: Retellings in Prose

William Shakespeare's 10 Histories: Retellings in Prose

William Shakespeare's 11 Tragedies: Retellings in Prose

William Shakespeare's 12 Comedies: Retellings in Prose

William Shakespeare's 38 Plays: Retellings in Prose

William Shakespeare's 1 Henry IV, aka Henry IV, Part 1: A Retelling in Prose

William Shakespeare's 2 Henry IV, aka Henry IV, Part 2: A Retelling in Prose

William Shakespeare's 1 Henry VI, aka Henry VI, Part 1: A Retelling in Prose

William Shakespeare's 2 Henry VI, aka Henry VI, Part 2: A Retelling in Prose

William Shakespeare's 3 Henry VI, aka Henry VI, Part 3: A Retelling in Prose

William Shakespeare's All's Well that Ends Well: A Retelling in Prose

William Shakespeare's Antony and Cleopatra: A Retelling in Prose

William Shakespeare's As You Like It: A Retelling in Prose

William Shakespeare's The Comedy of Errors: A Retelling in Prose

- William Shakespeare's Coriolanus: A Retelling in Prose*
- William Shakespeare's Cymbeline: A Retelling in Prose*
- William Shakespeare's Hamlet: A Retelling in Prose*
- William Shakespeare's Henry V: A Retelling in Prose*
- William Shakespeare's Henry VIII: A Retelling in Prose*
- William Shakespeare's Julius Caesar: A Retelling in Prose*
- William Shakespeare's King John: A Retelling in Prose*
- William Shakespeare's King Lear: A Retelling in Prose*
- William Shakespeare's Love's Labor's Lost: A Retelling in Prose*
- William Shakespeare's Macbeth: A Retelling in Prose*
- William Shakespeare's Measure for Measure: A Retelling in Prose*
- William Shakespeare's The Merchant of Venice: A Retelling in Prose*
- William Shakespeare's The Merry Wives of Windsor: A Retelling in Prose*
- William Shakespeare's A Midsummer Night's Dream: A Retelling in Prose*
- William Shakespeare's Much Ado About Nothing: A Retelling in Prose*
- William Shakespeare's Othello: A Retelling in Prose*
- William Shakespeare's Pericles, Prince of Tyre: A Retelling in Prose*
- William Shakespeare's Richard II: A Retelling in Prose*
- William Shakespeare's Richard III: A Retelling in Prose*
- William Shakespeare's Romeo and Juliet: A Retelling in Prose*
- William Shakespeare's The Taming of the Shrew: A Retelling in Prose*
- William Shakespeare's The Tempest: A Retelling in Prose*
- William Shakespeare's Timon of Athens: A Retelling in Prose*
- William Shakespeare's Titus Andronicus: A Retelling in Prose*
- William Shakespeare's Troilus and Cressida: A Retelling in Prose*

William Shakespeare's Twelfth Night: A Retelling in Prose

William Shakespeare's The Two Gentlemen of Verona: A Retelling in Prose

William Shakespeare's The Two Noble Kinsmen: A Retelling in Prose

William Shakespeare's The Winter's Tale: A Retelling in Prose

Children's Biography

Nadia Comaneci: Perfect Ten

Personal Finance

How to Manage Your Money: A Guide for the Non-Rich

Anecdote Collections

250 Anecdotes About Opera

250 Anecdotes About Religion

250 Anecdotes About Religion: Volume 2

250 Music Anecdotes

Be a Work of Art: 250 Anecdotes and Stories

Boredom is Anti-Life: 250 Anecdotes and Stories

The Coolest People in Art: 250 Anecdotes

The Coolest People in the Arts: 250 Anecdotes

The Coolest People in Books: 250 Anecdotes

The Coolest People in Comedy: 250 Anecdotes

Create, Then Take a Break: 250 Anecdotes

Don't Fear the Reaper: 250 Anecdotes

The Funniest People in Art: 250 Anecdotes

The Funniest People in Books: 250 Anecdotes

The Funniest People in Books, Volume 2: 250 Anecdotes

The Funniest People in Books, Volume 3: 250 Anecdotes

The Funniest People in Comedy: 250 Anecdotes
The Funniest People in Dance: 250 Anecdotes
The Funniest People in Families: 250 Anecdotes
The Funniest People in Families, Volume 2: 250 Anecdotes
The Funniest People in Families, Volume 3: 250 Anecdotes
The Funniest People in Families, Volume 4: 250 Anecdotes
The Funniest People in Families, Volume 5: 250 Anecdotes
The Funniest People in Families, Volume 6: 250 Anecdotes
The Funniest People in Movies: 250 Anecdotes
The Funniest People in Music: 250 Anecdotes
The Funniest People in Music, Volume 2: 250 Anecdotes
The Funniest People in Music, Volume 3: 250 Anecdotes
The Funniest People in Neighborhoods: 250 Anecdotes
The Funniest People in Relationships: 250 Anecdotes
The Funniest People in Sports: 250 Anecdotes
The Funniest People in Sports, Volume 2: 250 Anecdotes
The Funniest People in Television and Radio: 250 Anecdotes
The Funniest People in Theater: 250 Anecdotes
The Funniest People Who Live Life: 250 Anecdotes
The Funniest People Who Live Life, Volume 2: 250 Anecdotes
The Kindest People Who Do Good Deeds, Volume 1: 250 Anecdotes
The Kindest People Who Do Good Deeds, Volume 2: 250 Anecdotes
Maximum Cool: 250 Anecdotes
The Most Interesting People in Movies: 250 Anecdotes
The Most Interesting People in Politics and History: 250 Anecdotes

The Most Interesting People in Politics and History, Volume 2: 250 Anecdotes

The Most Interesting People in Politics and History, Volume 3: 250 Anecdotes

The Most Interesting People in Religion: 250 Anecdotes

The Most Interesting People in Sports: 250 Anecdotes

The Most Interesting People Who Live Life: 250 Anecdotes

The Most Interesting People Who Live Life, Volume 2: 250 Anecdotes

Reality is Fabulous: 250 Anecdotes and Stories

Resist Psychic Death: 250 Anecdotes

Seize the Day: 250 Anecdotes and Stories

